

FROM RAGS TO RICHES : THE SUPERNATURAL SON – IN - LAW

Vol.1

Robert Pattinson

ZrotA Publications



A WORD FROM PUBLICATION

Sorry, for inconvenience but if you are looking for **previous Chapters**, please look for same on **Prologue book** in **Amazon**. We made it as the minimum price possible on Amazon and free for kindle unlimited users.

Prologue Book Code: B0CG5LCYVM (past this code on [amazon search bar and click on search](#)).

We took this step to minimize piracy of contents. We are again deeply sorry for the inconvenience caused.

ZROTA PUBLICATIONS

More amazing stories are coming up. Stay tuned for ZrotA Publications pre-orders.



CHAPTER 3

Alex was shocked. Ten billion dollars? Who would pull this kind of prank?

Rockefeller Group was formidable in its heyday, with a market value of three hundred billion, but most of them were fixed assets. From what he knew, even his father did not have ten billion dollars cash in the bank. But more importantly, the old man claimed that he worked for William Rockefeller. "You said that you work for my father? That means that Thousand Miles

Conglomerate...”

Lord Lex nodded and said, “Yes,
the entire Thousand Miles
Conglomerate is yours, Master
Alex.” Slap!

Alex slapped himself across the face.

Lord Lex said in surprise,
“Master Alex, what are
you doing?” Alex replied,
“I think I might be

dreaming.”

Zr0tA

Lord Lex said, "This is all true. Your father, Mr. William Rockefeller, saved my life. If it weren't for him, I would have been dead by now. Back then, it was Mr. Rockefeller who built Thousand Miles Conglomerate. He then put me in charge of it."

"Huh?" Alex was dumbfounded, he still thought that it was just a dream.

Thousand Miles Conglomerate was out of Rockefeller Group's league. It was rumored to have trillions of dollars in assets, and it even had a huge influence in the underground world.

Alex thought to himself, 'My father created such a behemoth? Yet I have never heard of it?'

Lord Lex spoke again, "Mr. Rockefeller was a genius, not long after he founded Rockefeller Group, he also built Thousand Miles Conglomerate. One for the light and the other in the shadows to complement each other! Besides that, Mr. Rockefeller asked me to give this to you."

With that being said, he took out a small antique box and handed it to Alex.

With a perplexed look on his face, Alex

replied, "When did my father give it to you? Why are you only handing this over to me now?"

Lord Lex said, "Today is your twenty-fourth birthday. This is a birthday gift from your father. A year ago, Mr. Rockefeller had it arranged. Happy birthday, Master Alex!"

Alex was dumbfounded.

Lord Lex sighed and continued, "Master Alex, your mother is in a dire situation right now. As for me, it is not convenient for me to come forward and help. You should hurry! If you need anything, just

give a call. The number that I showed you just now is my personal phone number. I will always be on the line for you, master.”

Lord Lex had a weary look on his face.

After he was done speaking, he got into the Rolls Royce and left the scene.

Alex was still in shock as if it was all a dream.

The ATM card in his left hand and the small antique box in the right looked extremely real to him.

As luck would have it, there was an ATM machine right next to him. Alex rushed over, inserted the card, and entered the PIN. The balance showed \$10,000,000,000—10 billion dollars!

While looking at all the zeros, Alex's jaw dropped. He then opened up the antique box and found a pitch-black ring inside.

"Why did Dad give this to me?" Alex questioned. He tried it on and it fit right

on his finger.

ZrótA

Now that he had the money, Alex rushed to the hospital. The most urgent business to take care of was to pay for his mother's surgery immediately. Her condition would be much better once the surgery was done.

Alex's mother, Madame Brittany was hospitalized here and had been in a coma since the traffic accident. The doctors pronounced her as brain dead and said that the chances of her ever waking up was only 5%.

As Alex walked into the familiar hospital ward, he saw that it was empty. His

mother was not in the bed. Where could she have gone? He quickly ran out of the ward and bumped into a familiar someone.

“Hey, are you crazy, are you blind? Oh, it’s you. The famous piece of trash. Are you here to take advantage of me by bumping into me on purpose? Is it because you can’t touch your own wife at home? Well good news, you used to look down on me, but now you don’t even deserve me!”

A woman dressed in a nurse’s uniform loudly exclaimed. Her name was Chloe, an

acquaintance of Alex's. Back in his college days, Alex had dated Chloe for a month. He had then discovered that Chloe was a gold digger and was flirting with many others behind his back and broke up with her.

"Where is my mother? Where has she gone?" Alex asked with urgency in his tone as he had no time to waste with her.

Chloe smiled and said, "Haha, you should ask yourself that. You can't even look after your own mother. You are useless. Do you only know how to beg for money from your wife and mother-in-law like a

dog?"

Alex grabbed Chloe by the collar and yelled, "I'm asking you again, where is my mother? Where did you bring her to? You are the nurse on duty here, how can you not know?"

Seeing him shouting with rage, Chloe was frightened. She replied, "There...She's right over there."

Alex looked at where Chloe pointed and there was a hospital bed in the aisle, and the person lying on the bed was his mother, Madame Brittany.

"Mom!" Alex let go of Chloe and ran over

with his eyes turning red. Who was the one responsible for treating his mother like a piece of garbage?

Zr0tA

Alex was furious, "Chloe, did you do this?"

Chloe remembered that this was the hospital she worked at, why should she be afraid of him? He was the one who should be afraid of her! She snorted coldly, "So what if it was me? You are the one who is poor, can't afford to pay her bills. This is a private hospital. Do you think we are running a charity? If you can't afford it, the only option is to leave! What are you still doing here? You are not special. If you have the money, then pay up! If you can't afford

it, I'm sorry but to tell you that you need to get your mother out of the hospital now!"

Chloe looked at Alex with disdain.

Then she sneered, "Hey, how about this?"

Go back to grovel at your mother-in-law

and kneel down to your wife and beg them

a few more times, maybe they will change

their minds and give you some money. But

that nasty woman Dorothy Assex might

only give you a hundred dollars. If you

kneel and beg me, I will pay for your

mother's hospital bed."

A woman's voice could be heard saying,

“Even if he kneels to me everyday at home,
he would never kneel to you for money.”

Alex turned his head.

He was shocked to see that it was Dorothy.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 4

Alex was stunned as he did not expect her to show up. "Why are you here?"

Lady Dorothy looked at Chloe, then at Alex, with sadness in her eyes and said, "I have already deposited half a million dollars in your account, that is all I can

do.”

Alex was surprised, “Where did you get the money? Did you get it from Spark?”

Dorothy, you cannot take the money.

What will happen to us after taking his money? Moreover, I have the money, more than you can imagine. I can take care of your problem.”

Slap!

Dorothy slapped Alex across his face and said, “Was ten months of day- dreaming

not enough for you? Can you stop this nonsense? Forget it and do as you please. Tomorrow, we will go our separate ways!”

After she's done speaking, Dorothy turned around and left the hospital abruptly.

Alex tried to chase after her but was stopped by Chloe. She had a vile smile on her face. “Oh my, what is going on here? Why is your cousin, Spark, involved? Could it be that Dorothy wanted to help you and decided to earn the money by spending a night with Spark? Oh my, this is such a great comedy!”

Alex slapped Chloe in the face. "I will kill you if you keep spouting nonsense!" "How dare you slap me!" Chloe said as she rushed at Alex.

The head nurse who saw what was going on rushed over and stopped Chloe. "What are you two doing? Hold your horses, Chloe. Fighting in this hospital? Do you want me to fire you?"

After being reprimanded by the head nurse, Chloe came to her senses, she pointed at Alex and said, "This bastard

slapped me! Why can't I reciprocate?"

The head nurse knew Alex. She asked, "Why did you hit her?"

Alex pointed at his mother and coldly said,

"She left my mother here like a piece of garbage, and you dare to ask me why?"

There's no reason for her to just leave my mother here! She's human, not trash. I

know that there's no more money in my payment account, but it does not mean

that I can't afford to pay any longer."

The head nurse just only realized Lady

Brittany was left in the corridor.

She was furious and screamed. "What in the world are you doing Chloe? Who gave you the authority to do this? Apologize to Mr. Alex and immediately return the patient to the ward."

Chloe wouldn't dare to defy the head nurse, so she could only obediently apologize and bring Lady Brittany back to her ward.

Alex then went to find his mother's primary physician to arrange for the surgery as soon as possible.

Lady Brittany's primary doctor was Dr.

Cheryl and she was only twenty-six years old. Yet, she was already a renowned doctor with a great track record. She was the granddaughter of California's famous genius Dr. James Coney. Not only was she smart, she also had looks that would bring Troy to his knees.

Zr0tA

Alex was feeling anxious and troubled not only about the condition of his mother, but as well as the troubles that Dorothy was facing.

Without a thought, he stormed into Dr. Cheryl's office without knocking and was shocked to see a beautiful woman with skin as fair as Snow White changing her clothes. Her hourglass figure captivated him. Their eyes met and locked for a full three seconds before the woman could let out a scream. She quickly covered her body with her medical gown.

"I'm so sorry Dr. Cheryl! I swear it is not intentional. I'm no peeping tom." Alex apologized profusely. He hastily turned around and closed the door.

The beautiful woman was Doctor Cheryl Coney, his mother's primary physician. She was changing her clothes as she was getting ready to get off work. Leaning against the door,

Alex patted his chest and gasped. The scene that he just saw was still lingering in his mind, muttering to himself, "Such a beautiful figure..."

Suddenly, the door swung open and Alex almost fell on the ground facefirst. Then he saw Dr. Cheryl's mesmerizing face staring angrily at him. "What were you saying?" Dr. Cheryl asked.

"Ah, that..." Alex was dumbfounded. He couldn't remember what important business he had with Dr. Cheryl. "Dr. Cheryl, I was going to say was that idiot of

a nurse Chloe left my mother in the corridor. If anything happened to my mother, I want her to pay me back with her life.”

With that, he succeeded in capturing Dr. Cheryl’s attention. She was surprised and said, “That happened?”

She quickly ran over to the ward and saw Lady Brittany was being brought back to the ward. She immediately yelled at Nurse Chloe. Throughout the incident, Chloe’s head stayed low and she dared not to say

a single word. Then, Dr. Cheryl checked on Lady Brittany's condition and said to Alex, "In light of your mother's condition, my recommendation is that we have the surgery as soon as possible. Do you have the money? If you are facing difficulties, I can lend you the money."

"Ah, there's no need to do that. I have the money. Thank you, Dr. Cheryl."

Alex didn't expect that Dr. Cheryl would be kind enough to do that. Half a million dollars was no small sum, even for a famous doctor like her.

Chloe who overheard the conversation was also shocked and thought to herself, "Is Dr. Cheryl stupid? She offered to lend money to this garbage, what does she see in him?"

Dr. Cheryl answered, "Great! I'm glad to hear that. I will arrange for your mother's surgery the first thing in the morning tomorrow."

"Thank you!" Alex gratefully said.

“Follow me, let’s discuss some of the details to prepare for tomorrow’s operation.” Dr. Cheryl told Alex and they both left the ward. She mumbled on and on, mostly about the preparations needed before and after the surgery, time arrangements and finally said, “Please be early for tomorrow. There’s nothing to worry about. I will personally do the surgery. The success rate is very high! Moreover...”

Alex was listening attentively. Dr. Cheryl suddenly whispered in his ears, “Forget the image you saw in my office! Or I’ll

make you pay!" Alex nodded promptly signing to show that he'll make sure that the matter will only be between them. "Go away!" she continued.

Dr. Cheryl watched as Alex went back to his mother's ward, and she sighed.

Zr0tA

Of course, she did not fall for him, but was deeply touched by his filial piety.

Over the past ten months, Alex had visited his mother every single day without fail. She knew only a few people would be able to do that.

Soon, Alex ran to the payment counter to prepay one million dollars to the hospital for his mother's medical expenses.

The transaction went through without a hitch. Alex felt surreal when he took back the ATM card. Just like that, his life took another great turn. He was a master once

again. Only this time, he's even richer than he used to be.

"Spark, just you wait. How dare you have such thoughts about my wife! I will show you no mercy!"

While he thought of Spark, he remembered that Dorothy gave him the money for his mother's medical bills.

He took Spark's money, that despicable Spark! Was he taking the opportunity to sleep with her?

"Damn it!"

The thought of it filled him with rage. He quickly called Dorothy but her mobile phone was turned off. He felt that something was off. He immediately rang Madame Claire, "Mom, is Dorothy home?"

Madame Claire was furious when she heard his voice. "Dorothy is none of your business! You still have the audacity to call me? Don't ever look for us again under any circumstances."

"Mom, you cannot let Dorothy and Spark be together. I will take care of the money problem as well as Thousand Miles

Conglomerate. Please leave them to me!”

“Don’t make such ridiculous promises!”

Madame Claire angrily said, “If you can take care of these problems, pigs might fly. Let me be clear, Spark is my son-in-law, Dorothy and Spark are spending the night. You are nothing but a cuckold.”

Click!

Alex's felt as if his brain exploded upon hearing this. He felt disoriented as if the world was spinning under his feet.

Madame Claire had hung up the phone.

Alex felt like his soul had left him.

Although he was rich once again, it all meant nothing if Dorothy was not with him.

ZROVA

CHAPTER 5

Alex returned to the Assex family's villa as if he were a walking dead. Even though it was called a villa, it was just an unremarkable little house.

After demolishing the old family home, a three-story building was built from the ground up. It was a far cry from

a real villa.

Alex looked up and saw that the light in Dorothy's room was on. 'Is Dorothy at home?' Alex wondered to himself. 'She's not with Spark after all?' At that moment of realization, it was as if a huge burden was lifted from his chest. He saw hope and realized Madame Claire's words could not be trusted. She was deceitful. She liked to make things up just to fulfill the fantasies in her head.

Alex rushed through the doors into the

villa. He saw Madame Claire in the living room, video calling someone while applying nail polish on her toes with her feet up in the air. She was humming happily.

Alex felt overwhelmed, knowing that Madame Claire was thrilled that her daughter was going to get remarried. She had forgotten all about the threats from Gaston Gates.

Upon seeing Alex, Madame Claire jumped out of the couch and said, "Who let this

person in? You still dare to come back here? You are going to get divorced from Dorothy tomorrow. Get out!"

Alex ignored her comments and quickly rushed up the stairs. He wanted to make sure that Dorothy was in her room. He was determined not to lose her. Alex tried to open the door, but it was locked. He knocked hard on the door

and begged, "Dorothy, please open the door. I know that you're in there. I have something important to tell you."

Madame Claire followed Alex up with her bare feet and yelled, "You garbage of a person, get out of our house. Who gave you permission to come up here? You think you have the right to be here?"

"I must see Dorothy," Alex said with a firm voice.

"Did I not tell you that she went to spend the night with Spark? Maybe she'll be

pregnant with his child. Stop being a burden to my daughter and our family. If you stop my daughter from marrying Spark, I will hit you!" Madame Claire said.

Alex grunted.

Zr0tA

If his snobbish mother-in-law knew now that he had ten billion dollars in the bank and a trillion dollars empire, how would she feel? However, he decided it was not the right time to reveal it to her. In time, he would let her know of his newfound wealth and influence!

Suddenly, the door to Dorothy's room swung open. Dorothy was at the door and said, "Mom, can you watch your mouth? Even if you have no shame, I do! Who is spending the night with Spark? I'm not divorced yet. If word spreads, how can I face anyone?" As she spoke, Dorothy

slowly came out of the room. She looked at Alex without showing any emotions on her face.

Madame Claire quickly interjected as she saw Dorothy became unsettled, "I'm just telling him so that he would give up and never bother us again."

Alex was relieved to know that he was not too late. With a smile on his face, he assured Dorothy, "Darling, I'm so glad that you did not spend the night with Spark." He was filled with hope. He felt like a brand-new person, who had the power to protect those

that he loved.

Alex thought to himself, 'My darling Dorothy! You've never given up on me and endured so much for me over the past ten months. You can depend on me for the rest of our lives.'

Not understanding the meaning behind Alex's smile, Dorothy felt disappointed and angry. How could he be smiling after what had transpired? Had he really lost his mind?!

She angrily said, "What are you smiling

about? Even if I'm not with him today, I might be tomorrow. Are you happy about that?"

The expression on Alex's face changed immediately. He shook his head and said, "No, that's not what I mean. I just want to let you know that I'm not who I used to be! I admit that I had lost myself for the past ten months. Right now, I need to apologize and also thank you for not giving up on me.

Finally, I can stand on my own two feet, I can protect you. That Gaston from Thousand Miles Conglomerate is nothing in front of me. I will avenge you.

From now on, nobody will harass you..."

Just as Alex was speaking enthusiastically,

Madame Claire slapped him across his

face. "Are you hallucinating?" asked

Madame Claire, "Are you

Zr0tA

brain dead? You must have gone insane. Why don't you just tell us that you own Thousand Miles Conglomerate? Get out of our home now before you spread your craziness around here!"

Alex glared at Madame Claire. He wanted to tell her that he truly was the owner of Thousand Miles Conglomerate so badly. However, even if he said it, no one would believe him, just as Dorothy thought he was crazy when he told her he had ten billion dollars. It was indeed difficult for anyone, even himself, to believe it was true.

He took a deep breath and said, "Dorothy, just give me one day. Trust me. I can take care of everything. I... I found an old friend of my father who is willing to help me. The half a million dollars that you gave me, is it from Spark? I am going to repay him right now."

Alex turned around and wanted to go look for Spark after finishing his sentence.

“Hold on!” Dorothy said, “Don’t go!”

Alex answered, “Dorothy, I’m begging you, just trust me this once. Don’t agree to Spark’s proposal. One day is all I need. Let me prove it to you! If I fail, I would agree to a divorce! I do not need the half a million dollars from Spark.”

Dorothy just looked at him stoically. She felt like he was a different person. She sighed and said, “I did not take the money from Spark. I sold off my wedding ring for the money.”

“What did you say?” Alex almost was

about to faint as he learned that Dorothy had sold off the wedding ring the both of them had picked together, but was relieved knowing that the money was not Spark's and asked, "Who did you sell it to? I'm going to buy it back right now."

Dorothy shook her head and said, "I sold it for half a million dollars, but if you want to buy it back, it may cost more than a million dollars. Even if you did not use the money for your mother's medical bills, there's no way you can afford to buy it back. Maybe our life and marriage are destined to end. Please wake up Alex, stop dreaming! I hope

you can live well without me.”

As Dorothy finished her sentence, she turned around and slammed the door.

Tears were running down her cheeks.

Alex said, “No, I won’t allow that to happen.

Who did you sell it to? I will buy it back right away! Even if it costs me a hundred million dollars, I would still buy it. Don’t worry, I will not let our marriage end.”

“L.G. Balfour!” Dorothy

replied from behind the

door. “Okay! You have to

wait for me!” Alex

exclaimed excitedly.

Dorothy shook her head and thought to herself, "This man must have gone mad. He really thinks that he has the hundred million dollars?"

Zr0tA

Madame Claire chased Alex out of their home. "Rockefeller, I'm telling you right now, you are getting a divorce with Dorothy tomorrow!" If you dare to interfere with Dorothy marrying Spark, I will come after you!"

Alex took a deep breath and quickly rushed to L.G. Balfour.

L.G. Balfour was the premier jewelry store in California. There's only one store in California, so it was easy to locate.

It's already half-past eight as Alex reached the store. Luckily the store had

not closed as there were quite a few
customers still browsing inside.

Zr0tA

The store was enormous, with a total of three storeys. They were stocked to the brim with all kinds of expensive and exclusive jewelry. It was difficult to estimate the total value of all their goods.

The security measurements in the store were absolutely top-notch.

Alex wanted to look for a store assistant, but he ran into a familiar face. It was the nurse from the hospital—his ex-girlfriend, Chloe. Chloe was taken aback when she saw him and immediately walked towards him and said in a playful tone, "My my, did I step on dog poop today? Why does my luck have

to be so terrible to run into you again? What are you doing here? You cannot afford the jewelry here!”

Chloe was not in her nurse uniform and was wearing a tight dress that displayed her alluring figure. She was with an obese man in a suit and leather shoes, and she was hanging on him as if she were part of his body.

Alex replied, “It is none of your business!”

Chloe sneered, “Don’t forget what your wife had to do just to get the money for your mother’s surgery. Don’t tell me that you are

using the money to buy a gift for her? You should just go home! This is not a place that welcomes a pauper like you."

Alex angrily replied, "You cannot even begin to imagine how much money I have. Would you believe that I can buy this right now?" pointing at the necklace on the billboard, named Love in a Fallen City, with the price tag of thirty million dollars.

Chloe laughed out loud and said, "Are you daydreaming? If you can afford it, I will kneel down and lick your feet!"

CHAPTER 6

Alex shook his head and sneered,
“Chloe, you are not qualified to lick
my toes. You should go home and
lick this fattie’s toes. If you make him
happy, he might buy you two
thousand dollars worth of rubbish.”

“You...”

Chloe’s anger was so intense, she’s like a ticking time bomb about to go off.

The fattie finally chased Chloe, when he was about to coax her to bed, Alex made a fool out of him. The fattie said, “You penniless bastard, take a pettylook at yourself, do you think you can afford this necklace with a thirty million dollars price tag? What?! Do you think it is only three thousand dollars?”

“What if I can afford to buy it? Can you afford one? Will you buy one

too?” Asked Alex. Alex had made up his mind to purchase the jewelry. He had owed Lady Dorothy Assex too much for the past ten months.

Buying a necklace worth thirty million dollars might make her happy, and gain her trust in his capability to protect her.

The fattie said angrily, “Where did this idiot come from, a bunch of nonsense, Chloe, how

did you know this kind of person? It demotes me every time talking to him.”

Alex sneered, “Tell me directly if you do not have money, there is no need to make excuses. I won’t make things difficult for you. After all, there is only one ‘Love in a Fallen City’, only my wife is worthy of it, your girlfriend is unworthy of the necklace. It is better if you could just buy the one beside it, which is three million dollars, how about it, want to bet?”

“Wow, who do you think you are to threaten me?! Bring it on! But what if you

can't afford it?" the fattie yelled.

Alex didn't have the chance to speak yet.

Chloe said, "If you can't afford it, kneel and address me as yourmother three times!" Alex stared at her coldly, "Got it!"

They randomly asked the nearest shop assistant.

And they found out that they needed to go to the third floor if they wanted to buy the 'Love in a Fallen City' necklace.

The three of them arrived at the third floor in a blink of an eye, found the counter, and

saw the person in charge of this necklace
was an acquaintance.

She was Lady Dorothy's best friend,
Cassandra.

Zr0tA

“What? You want to buy the ‘Love in a Fallen City’ necklace? Are you out of your mind?”

After Cassandra heard about it, she looked at Alex and felt so angry. “Alex, I don’t understand, what right do you have to hold onto Dorothy, be a man, divorce Lady Dorothy immediately, don’t be a burden to her anymore!

Don’t you know, Dorothy came to me a while ago and sold her wedding ring for half a million dollars for your mother’s medical expenses. Now you are telling me that you want to buy a thirty million dollar ‘Love in a Fallen City’ necklace, do you think

I am an idiot to believe in you?"

Zr0tA

Alex knew that something bad would happen if he met her, as she mocked

him all the time. Chloe and the fattie that stood next to her burst into laughter.

Chloe said, "Alex, did you hear that your wife even sold the wedding ring, and you are still here, pretending to be rich? Just admit that you can't afford it. Kneel, lick the soles of my feet, and address me as your mother three times!"

As soon as she finished talking, she took off her shoes and stretched out her feet.

Alex didn't even take a glance at her, and said to Cassandra, "What if I can afford to buy it?"

Cassandra furiously replied, "If you can afford to buy it, I will kneel before you and address you as my father!"

Snap!

Alex took out his creditcard.

"Swipe the card!"

Cassandra grabbed the bank card, threw it

on Alex, and said resentfully, "Would you cut it out, already? Stop interfering with my work here. Alex, I know you well enough! Don't even bother to think about that thirty million dollars necklace, you can't even afford a three thousand dollars necklace!"

"If you don't leave now, I will ask the security guard to chase you out of here."

Alex frowned, "I'm here to buy things, why would you want to chase me out? Cassandra, are you trying to get yourself fired?"

Cassandra waved, and the two security

guards who had already noticed what happened earlier rushed over.

A security guard said, "Cassandra, what's the matter?"

Zr0tA

Cassandra said, "This guy is here to cause trouble, please chase him out."

Alex said coldly, "Cassandra, don't be shameless, I'm here to buy things, not to cause trouble. If your boss gets to know about your service attitude, do you think you can continue to work here? Aren't you scared of me filing a complaint about you to your boss?"

Cassandra glared at him, "Well if you wish to buy the 'Love in a Fallen City' necklace, you will need the VIP membership card of L.G. Balfour or the star membership card of

Thousand Miles Conglomerate. If you have
one of those, I can sell it to you."

"Thousand Miles Conglomerate?"

Zr0tA

Alex was frozen for a while.

One of the security guards said, "Yes, L.G. Balfour is a subsidiary of Thousand Miles Conglomerate. Think about the consequences, if you try to cause trouble here."

Alex frowned, he did not have any of those membership cards.

Chloe teased, "Are you shocked? Accept your defeat. How about you kneel and lick the soles of my feet? This place belongs to Thousand Miles Conglomerate. If you are trying to cheat out of a bet, you are trying to

offend Lord Lex Gates. Deal with it.”

Alex said, “Give me a few minutes.”

He took out his cell phone, dialed Lord Lex Gates’s number, and said, “I am at L.G.

Balfour and I wish to purchase the ‘Love in a Fallen City’ necklace, but I don’t have a membership card, so I can’t buy it.”

Lord Lex Gates said immediately, “Master, please give me two minutes, I will deal with it immediately.”

Alex hung up the phone and glanced at everyone, “Please give me two minutes.”

Cassandra sneered, “Okay, I’ll give you

two minutes to see what kind of tricks you are trying to play. If you are trying to cause trouble here intentionally, I will beat the hell out of you!”

Finally, in

less than

two

minutes. A

middle-

aged man

hurried

over.

Cassandra and the two security guards

saw that person and immediately greeted

him respectfully.

They exclaimed, "Hello, Mr. Jefferson!"

It turned out that he was the general manager of L.G. Balfour, Jefferson.

Zr0tA

Cassandra thought that Jefferson had come to check out what happened after hearing the noise. She quickly pointed at Alex and said, "Mr. Jefferson, this guy came here to cause a fuss. He doesn't have a membership card but kept saying that he wished to buy the treasure of our store, the 'Love in a Fallen City' necklace. The security guards will chase him out from here now."

Without a word,

Jefferson slapped her in

her face. "You are

ridiculous!"

"He is the Supreme VIP of L.G. Balfour!"

“What?”

Everyone was flabbergasted and speechless.

Meanwhile, Cassandra who was covering her face, was stunned.

Jefferson walked up to Alex and said respectfully, “Master Alex, I’m sorry for being late.” Alex looked at him, “So, can I buy this ‘Love in a Fallen City’ necklace now?”

Jefferson bowed and said, “Yes, of course, you can. Oh wait you can have it if you like it, you don’t need to pay anything for it.”

“What?” Chloe was speechless.

Looking back and forth at Alex and the necklace, there was envy in her eyes. The thirty million dollars necklace was being given away just like that.

Why?

Wasn't Alex a piece of trash? How was he qualified for L.G. Balfour to give him such an expensive gift?

“No, I will buy it myself!”

Alex took out his black credit card and threw it at Cassandra.

“Please, swipe the card!”

“Remember what you have said just now, I will be your father after I have bought the necklace!”

Cassandra took the credit card and her face turned pale.

Alex pointed at Chloe and Fattie and said to Jefferson, “Also, these two people here, they placed a bet with me just now that if I bought the ‘Love

in a Fallen City' necklace, they will buy the three million dollars necklace shown on the billboard. You bet, you pay, or you are showing no respect to Lord Lex."

The security immediately blocked the two people, intentionally or unintentionally.

One minute later.

Beep...

Payment successful.

When Cassandra handed the credit card back to Alex, her hands were

slightly shaking. Thirty million dollars was paid successfully. How much credit was actually available on this card?

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 7

Cassandra was startled.

Unfortunately, the balance of the card
could not be displayed on
the machine.

"It's unbelievable, why does Mr. Jefferson respect him so much, even saying that he is a supreme VIP, I do not think there has been any supreme card in L.G. Balfour?" Her mind was filled with questions.

She could not seem to understand the reason. Alex had been living off the Assex's family and served the Assex's family as a nanny. Why was there such a huge contrast?

In the past, Alex had even poured water for

her to wash her feet!

Chloe yelled, "Impossible, impossible, absolutely impossible. The machine must be broken. How can this garbage of a human have thirty million dollars? He shouldn't even be able to withdraw three thousand dollars! You guys, double-check the transaction! Hurry up!"

Jefferson glared at Chloe. "So, are you trying to go back on your words here in the subsidiaries of the Thousand Miles Conglomerate? How dare you scold Master Alex? You dug your own grave!

Guards, slap her!”

Thousand Miles Conglomerate had the most influence over the underworld in California. Of course, their security guards had to be

Zr0tA

extraordinary.

Right after receiving the orders, Chloe was pinned down to the countertop and was slapped a dozen times in a row.

Her face was swollen and looked like a pig's head.

Zr0tA

The fattie that stood next to her didn't dare to make a sound.

"Fattie, don't forget about the jewelry with a three million dollars price tag!"

Alex reminded him.

The fattie was about to cry. To him, three million dollars was not a small amount.

However being confronted by the

Thousand Miles Conglomerate, he didn't have the guts to say no.

He answered promptly,

"Okay, okay, I'll buy it right away." When Chloe heard

it, her eyes shone with excitement.

After shopping for half of a day here, they only bought a bracelet for two thousand dollars. She wanted to buy a jade bracelet, but the fattie had refused, he said that he would buy it after tonight...

Now that he was going to purchase a piece of jewelry for three million dollars, she should thank Alex!

As she was about to reach out to the jewelry, the fattie pushed her away. "Go

away, who said that this was for you?"

Chloe shouted, "If it was not for me, then whom is it for?"

Fattie replied, "I'm buying this for my mother. From now on, this will be my family's heirloom. You are not worthy of being my wife. You're just a b*tch, stop daydreaming!"

Chloe was furious. She lunged herself at Fattie and started a fight with him. Finally, Jefferson gave an order to drag and kick them all out.

Cassandra looked at Alex with mixed

emotions, at last, she couldn't help but ask, "I don't understand. How can you be so rich, being able to casually buy a piece of jewelry worth thirty million dollars, but yet allow Lady

Zr0tA

Dorothy to sell her wedding ring for the sake of your mother? Have you been lying to her to manipulate her feelings?"

Alex answered, "That is my

business, you won't

understand." Then he said,

"Bring out that wedding

ring!"

Jefferson said, "Hurry up! How dare you!

You should quickly take it out when the

master has asked. Otherwise, you are

going to pay the price."

Cassandra dared not to hesitate, she

hurriedly took the ring out, and said,
“According to the company’s policy, the
company paid half a million dollars for this
diamond ring. If you wish to purchase it
back, the selling price must be doubled, so
you will have to pay one million dollars for
it.”

Zr0tA

Jefferson slapped Cassandra again and cursed, "Double? Are you out of your mind? Don't you know Master Alex's identity? He is the owner of Thousand Miles Conglomerate. Does he need to pay for a ring like this?"

This guy was very rough and didn't look like a general manager of a jewelry store. He must be from the underworld.

Cassandra's eyes bulged, doubting her ears. Mr. Jefferson had said that Alex owned the entire Thousand Miles Conglomerate. How was it possible?

He was not a loser.

He was the secret boss after all.

Alex said, "That's enough Mr. Jefferson, no need to publicize this, it will only create unpleasant rumors."

Jefferson quickly slapped himself. "I'm sorry, Master. It was my mistake. Please deal with me as you please."

Alex was speechless.

After that, he looked at

Cassandra. "What have you promised?" Cassandra was startled.

After that, she lowered her head and said in extreme humiliation, "Father!"

Alex said, "Remember, I don't want anyone to know my identity, including Lady Dorothy. Do make sure you keep it under wraps, otherwise, you will face the consequences."

Cassandra was aware of how powerful Thousand Miles Conglomerate was. She quickly nodded her head when she heard his words.

Jefferson said, "Master, shall we..."

With his thumb, he drew an invisible line

across his neck.

When Cassandra saw and understood what it meant, she was so scared that her heart skipped a beat!

Zr0tA

Alex said, "There's no need for that, she is my wife's best friend. Also, she is now my daughter. Give her a chance. Let her work here and please take good care of her."

"Alright, then. Let's promote her to the manager on the third floor, what do you think?" Jefferson asked.

"Do as you please," Alex replied.

Alex carried jewelry worth millions of dollars in his hands. Under the escort of Cassandra and Jefferson, he walked out of L.G. Balfour.

Cassandra was dumbfounded. It was a blessing in disguise that she was promoted to manager.

The way she looked at Alex had changed.

Right at that moment, a Rolls-Royce Phantom appeared in front of them. The person in the car was Lord Lex Gunther.

Cassandra saw Lord Lex escort Alex into the car respectfully before it drove away. Alex said to Lord Lex Gunther, "Lord Lex, I have a favor to ask."

Lord Lex Gunther replied promptly, "Young Master, your wish is my command. I am always at your service."

"Do you happen to know this person by the name Sir Gaston in Thousand Miles Conglomerate? Recently he signed a contract with my wife's company, Assex

Constructions. At the reception, I saw him bullying my wife and asked her to sleep with him."

"Son of a b*tch!"

Lord Lex Gunther was furious. "Lady Dorothy got involved?! He practically signed his own death warrant, what is his full name?"

"I don't know. Sir Gaston was all that I know. Is there no such person by your side?"

"I don't recall anyone with the family name of Gaston, but I will check it out right away."

I will get to the bottom of this by tomorrow.”

“Okay, I’ll wait for your news.” Alex nodded, and he said, “By the way, about the fact that my dad is the founder of Thousand Miles Conglomerate, don’t publicize it. Keep it in the dark as it has always been and stop addressing me as master from now on, just Mr. Alex.”

Lord Lex Gunther was stunned, then nodded. "Very well, keeping it low may keep you safe. There are lots of opponents in Thousand Miles Conglomerate. I'm afraid that it might lead to you and Lady Dorothy. I will address you Mr. Alex when we are outside."

Alex's eyes fluttered. He hadn't thought about it before. Come to think of it, he should try to keep a low profile.

Lord Lex Gunther's name was well known to be the greatest gang leader in California.

He must be living life under the glint of armors and flash of swords. He must have countless enemies.

ZroTA

After that, Lord Lex Gunther took out another card. "This is Thousand Miles Conglomerate's Supreme VIP Card.

Expenses in all the subsidiaries will be waived. Take it, it will save you a lot of trouble and may hide your identity."

"Okay! I'm leaving!" said Alex.

"Master, let me drive you home, going to the Assex's residence?" Lord Lex replied.

"Hmm..." Alex pondered. He surely cannot enter the Assex's residence now as his mother-in-law might lop his head off. "Send me to a hotel, any

hotel will do.”

“The Golden Age of Youth

Hotel it is!” Lord Lex

exclaimed. “Is that

necessary?” asked Alex.

That was the most expensive and luxurious

hotel in California.

Lord Lex Gunther smiled and said, “Master,

that’s your property too!”

CHAPTER 8

As he lay down on the bed of the most luxurious presidential suite in The Golden Age of Youth Hotel, Alex couldn't fall asleep.

What happened today was too overwhelming.

He didn't expect that his father had kept such a big secret, Thousand Miles Conglomerate, most powerful in the underworld of California. Would that mean that his father was the strongest underground boss too?

Was it true that his death was due to a traffic accident?

Or there's more to this than met the eye?

Late in the midnight hours, when he finally fell into a deep sleep, he was

woken up by his phone alarm. He got up and rushed to the hospital.

In the end, when he arrived at the hospital, he saw several doctors gathered around his mother's bed. Among them, Dr. Cheryl Coney, a beautiful doctor with a particularly hot body, was there too.

He was shocked.

He thought something bad happened to his mother.

He quickly asked, "Dr. Cheryl, what's wrong with my mother? Has her condition gotten worse?"

Dr. Cheryl in a white coat and a mask turned around and said, "Don't worry, her condition did not worsen, but has shown signs of improvement."

Alex froze for a while, and said in surprise, "Really?"

Dr. Cheryl nodded. "Yes, before this we

thought that your mother's condition was bad, and she needed surgery right away. Unexpectedly, it quickly stabilized, and all the indicators returned to normal. Your mother has a very strong will to survive. This is great."

"So, there is no need for surgery?"

"Let's do an inspection first. If everything is fine, there is no need for surgery. The surgery has its risks too."

Two hours later.

The inspection report was out.

Cheryl nodded and said, "It's good, no

surgery is needed, and according to our observation, your mother's chances of waking up has increased, indicating that she has her consciousness, and I will continue to treat her by acupuncture."

Alex was overjoyed and hugged her tightly. "Thank you, thank you, Dr. Cheryl!"

He was delighted. This was the first time that his mother's situation had shown any improvement in ten months.

Dr. Cheryl, whom Alex suddenly hugged,
frowned immediately.

Zr0tA

She perceived that he didn't intend to harass her, so she didn't blame him, but patted him on his back, "Okay, take good care of your mother, keep it up!"

"Okay," said Alex.

"Can you let go of me?" Dr. Cheryl asked.

ZroTA

"Okay!" Alex replied.

"Let go now!" she exclaimed.

"No, Dr. Cheryl, your hair is stuck in my clothes..." Alex answered

At the same time, at the Assex's villa...

Spark Rockefeller came in his
Lamborghini, to see Lady Dorothy again.

The car honked.

Madame Claire, who was wearing black pajamas, opened the door and greeted him, "Oh, Spark, my dear son-in-law, it felt like I haven't seen you a long time, even though I haven't seen you for just

one night, mom missed you so much.”

She wore no make-up, and her hair tousled.

She still looked as young as thirty years old, with a more matured temptation.

Seeing such a lively and charming woman, Spark was so eager to rush forward and take her into his arms, but fortunately, he resisted, he thought in his mind, ‘Just wait till I get Lady Dorothy. By that time none of you can runaway. Alex Rockefeller, that good-for-nothing, can’t get a hold of this treasure. Such a fool.’

While thinking, Spark handed

the gift he was holding to

Madame Claire. He also took the

opportunity to touch her.

Madame Claire didn't realize it at all, but

smiled. "Aw, you're my best son-in-law

ever. Not only did you visit me but

brought me gifts too!

Compared to you, that trash Alex is

nothing but rubbish. Both of you are

Rockefellers, but there are such huge

differences between the two of you!"

Spark smiled and said, "Mom, why would

you bring up that trash, you're killing the

mood." "Okay, okay, I say no more!"

Both of them entered.

Zr0tA

Lady Dorothy and her sister, Lady Beatrice were both there. Lady Dorothy felt very uncomfortable when she heard Spark shamelessly address her mother as "Mum", what's done was done. She had no way out and was helpless.

The night before, Alex vowed solemnly and said that he had the money and can easily solve the problem, but till now he was nowhere to be seen, not even a phone call, could she believe in him?

Don't tell me!

“Mum, I hand-picked this jade bracelet for you last night. Do you like it? I think it is a perfect match with the fair skin on your beautiful hands!”

“While this diamond necklace, Sis Beatrice, is for you. You are beautiful. Try it on. It will look great on you.”

Spark took out the gifts, sweet-talking. The two women were dazed immediately. They

couldn't wait to

wear them on.

Madame Claire compared Alex Rockefeller with Spark again and was determined to divorce Lady Dorothy from Alex. Comparing both Rockefeller brothers, they were worlds apart.

The more she looked at the jade bracelet on her hand, the more she liked, but as she saw Lady Dorothy sitting on the sofa, who kept quiet, she immediately rolled her eyes and said, "My dear son-in-law, you bought gifts for both your mother and sister, have

you bought something for your wife,
Dorothy too?"

Lady Dorothy felt uneasy and said, "Mom,
shame on you! Alex and I are not divorced
yet. I am still Alex's wife."

Madame Claire coldly snorted. "Wife!
Bullshit! Has he ever touched you? You
have sold the wedding ring, what else is
there to talk about? Since Spark
Rockefeller is here now, ask the trash to
come over now and get divorced. Then,
get your marriage certificate with Spark,
and be Spark Rockefeller's wife."

Spark heard it and was overjoyed.

Lady Beatrice supported, "Yes, Sis. I think that is such a good idea. Killing two birds with one stone. Anyway, I won't acknowledge Alex that trash as my brother-in-law. Only a young man like Spark is worthy of being my brother-in-law."

Lady Dorothy felt powerless and

weak. She was speechless.

Spark then said, "Okay, let's go file for your divorce and register for our marriage right away."

Lady Dorothy felt extremely disgusted and said, "You haven't solved the problem for me yet. Let's talk about it when the problem is solved!"

Spark smiled and said, "That is easy... Hehe, there's nothing my parents couldn't handle, right? Easy! By the way, it's almost noon.

How about we first grab some lunch, then
you can divorce that trash. My dad can step
in for you... Dorothy, I am not threatening
you, this is to

Zr0tA

show sincerity to my dad. Otherwise, how would he believe that I want to marry you when you are still married?"

Madame Claire nodded.

Promptly said, "Let me call up that trash."

...

It was half-past eleven in the morning, Alex just came out from the hospital and was going to find out from Lord Lex Gunther if the problem had been resolved, but suddenly he received a call from Madame Claire saying that they were having lunch with Spark Rockefeller and asked him to

bring along his marriage certificate to meet them. She wanted them to head straight to the office to divorce after lunch.

Alex'

s

face

dark

ene

d.

Divo

rce?

"Okay, I'll be right there!"

He decided to bring along the Love in a

Fallen City necklace worth thirtymillion dollars to shove it in both Madame Claire and Spark Rockefeller's face.

Half an hour later.

Alex rushed to the restaurant.

As soon as he walked in, he saw Spark taking out a jewelry box and said to his wife Lady Dorothy, "Dorothy, my heart is for you. I call upon heaven and earth as my witness. Just like this only necklace in the world, I want you in my life, you and no one else."

Then, he opened the jewelry box and showed

it to Lady Dorothy.

Lady Beatrice covered her mouth and exclaimed, "Oh my God...Is this the treasure of L.G. Balfour, 'Love in a Fallen City' that is worth thirty million

Zr0tA

dollars? I saw someone on the Internet saying that there was a mysterious guy who bought the necklace last night, and it turned out to be you, Brother Spark Rockefeller. Sister, you are so blessed!"

Spark was stunned.

The Love in a Fallen City necklace he was holding was an imitation, but he didn't expect that someone would have bought that necklace with a thirty million dollar price tag. However, it would be better if the necklace had been purchased, then there was no way to confirm that the

necklace he was holding was fake, and he said promptly, "Yes, I bought it for thirty million dollars last night."

"Hmmm, yours is fake!"

Zr0tA

“The one that I am holding is the genuine

Love in a Fallen

City necklace!” At that moment, Alex

sneered.

He walked in and threw the jewelry box in

his hand on the table.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 9

There was pin-drop silence!

Everyone in that private dining room
was shocked.

But a few seconds later, a

burst of laughter broke the
silence. Everyone laughed.

Only Lady Dorothy was deeply disappointed
after being shocked.

Madame Claire then exclaimed, "You can
afford to buy the Love in a Fallen City
necklace worth thirty million dollars? Did
you sleep on the street last night? You
must be still asleep, still dreaming about it
huh? If you can afford this necklace, I will
eat this table."

Alex replied indifferently, "Mum, you don't
need to eat the table, your teeth are not

strong enough to bite it.”

Madame Claire raised her brows and glared, “Mum? Who is your mother? Your mother is still in the hospital, half-dead! From today onwards, Spark Rockefeller is my only son-in-law, and he is the only one qualified to address me as a mum. You, divorce Dorothy in the afternoon.”

Alex glanced and clenched his fist.

“What? Are you angry? How dare trash like you be angry at me, dare to beat me up?”

Madame Claire pointed at her head, “Come

on, here, beat my head, if you dare to beat
me, I lose!"

Zr0tA

Alex couldn't be bothered to deal with this shrew.

Zr0tA

Instead, he looked at Lady Dorothy and said, "Dorothy, I told you I am not who I used to be. Now I can protect you and everyone around me. The Lovein a Fallen City necklace inside of this jewelry box is the proof! L.G. Balfour only had one Love in a Fallen City necklace, the only one in the world, which is exactly the one I bought, the rest are fake!"

"Also, I retrieved our wedding ring, and it's in this box."

As soon as he stopped talking, he heard Madame Claire roaring with laughter.

“Listen, Dorothy. Listen carefully, what kind of bullsh*t is he spouting? How shameless, he must have gone insane! How dare he say that Spark’s Love in a Fallen City necklace is fake. Is yours genuine? Yours must be fake too.”

Spark said, “Yes! Alex, this is a real eye-opener. Bunch of bullshit. With my current status as Spark Rockefeller, do you think I will use a fake necklace to deceive people? Thirty million dollars means nothing to me, but what about you? You knelt to Mum, begging for half a million dollars yesterday. No one would believe in you.”

Alex heard Spark
addressing Madame Claire
as his mother. He was
speechless.

He looked at Lady Dorothy,
“Dorothy, do you believe in
me?” Lady Dorothy couldn’t
believe in
him.

She asked, “Let me ask you, you said you
have a way to solve the threat by
Thousand Miles Conglomerate, have you
done it?”

Alex said, “My people are working on it,

news will be here soon." Spark laughed and said, "You liar, do you know anyone from Thousand

Miles Conglomerate? Even if you kneel in front of the entrance of Thousand

Miles Conglomerate for three days and three nights, no one will help you. You are talking smack."

Lady Dorothy sighed and said nothing.

She knew that she shouldn't have pinned her hopes on him at all. At this moment, Alex's cell phone rang.

He looked at the caller ID on the screen, and it was the boss of ThousandMiles Conglomerate, Lord Lex Gunther.

He picked up the call.

Lord Lex Gunther said on the other side, "Master, I have checked with the matter, and I've found the person. Would you like me to drown this person?"

Alex was overjoyed and looked at Spark.

He remembered Lady Dorothy had told him yesterday that she wanted to take revenge with her own hands.

He said immediately, "That's too easy on him, I will take care of him myself." Lord Lex Gunther said, "Okay, where are you, Master? I'll pick you up."

Alex said, "Don't bother, I'll be there."

Lord Lex Gunther replied, "Okay, I'm at

Hell's Angels." He hung up.

Alex said to Lady Dorothy, "It has been resolved, Thousand Miles Conglomerate will no longer threaten you. That rascal Sir Gaston has been found. If he dares to think about laying a finger on you again, I will take revenge on him myself! I will kill him!" Then right after that, he felt hungry.

He sat down, grabbed a bowl of salad, and gobbled it up.

When Madame Claire saw him eating like a hungry hippo, she shot him a look of disdain. "You can't even afford to have a

proper meal, how dare you continue to
daydream!”

Lady Dorothy didn't believe it at all.

Looking at Alex talking big and fantasizing,
she was heartbroken.

She stood up abruptly, took up a cup, and
splashed it on his face, “I beg you, would
you please wake up? Stop dreaming! When
will you stop making a fool of yourself?

You should take care of your mother in the
hospital!”

Alex swallowed the food and wiped his face.

“Dorothy, you must trust me, just wait, you will receive the

news soon!” Full of confidence, he turned around and left.

Madame Claire grabbed the jewelry box angrily, threw it out the door, and cursed, “You’re crazy! Take your bloody broken box with you. Who knows what is in there? Get out! If I knew you were trash back then, I would never have agreed to let you marry Dorothy.”

Pop!

The jewelry box was thrown open.

Zr0tA

Inside, both the wedding ring and the Love in
a Fallen City

necklace fell out. Madame
Claire was stunned. She
didn't expect there to be a
necklace in the box.

Alex picked up the wedding ring. As he was
about to pick up the necklace, a woman
picked it up.

Looking up, it turned out to
be that beautiful Dr. Cheryl
Coney. "Dr. Cheryl, why are
you here?" Alex was slightly

startled.

"I'm here to have a meal with a friend." She was slightly surprised after glancing at the Love in a Fallen City necklace, and smiled, "Such a beautiful necklace, you should take care of it, here you are."

"Isn't it

beautiful?"

ul?"

Alex

smiled

bitterly

.

He had spent thirty million dollars on the

necklace, but it was thrown away like garbage, "Here, you can have it, the rest think that it's fake anyway."

After speaking, he left without looking back. "Uh..."

Dr. Cheryl held the necklace in a daze and finally looked at the people in the private dining room.

She put away the necklace and walked towards her private dining room. It was just a fake necklace, take it and leave!

Madame Claire sneered. "See? Giving it away easily to a passer-by like this, and he still dares to claim that it is the Love in a Fallen City necklace that is worth thirty million dollars? Look who got hold of the genuine Love in a Fallen City necklace now! Dorothy, you should thank Spark, keep the present! This necklace is a token of Spark's love for you."

Lady Dorothy was moody and shook her head. "This is too expensive, I cannot accept it."

Madame Claire took the necklace, and said,

“You silly girl. Alright, I will keep it for you,
until the day you marry Spark.”

At this moment, Cassandra walked in.

“Dorothy, you’re here! I was looking for you
all over!”

Zr0tA

She heard that Lady Dorothy and Alex Rockefeller might be divorcing, so she came to help keep their marriage together.

She knew that Alex had
Thousand Miles Conglomerate
supporting him. That was a
real big shot!

If she could hold on to being a friend of
Alex and Dorothy, she could be at peace of
mind for the rest of her life...

But she didn't know the reason for Alex
keeping his identity a secret. She could not

let the cat out of the bag, the best that she could do was help them salvage their relationship.

In fact, in her heart, she wanted to marry Alex the most! "Hey, this necklace..."

She suddenly saw the necklace in Madame Claire's hand, "Why does it look like the Love in a Fallen City necklace?"

Madame Claire bragged and said, "Cassandra, you are right, this is the one and only Love in a Fallen City necklace,

and it is Spark's love token to Dorothy."

Cassandra looked at the necklace, then at Spark Rockefeller.

After that, she showed disdain and said, "I think you are deceived by someone with ulterior motives. This is not the Love in a Fallen City necklace at all, it's a replica. It's fake."

Spark stood up with a gloomy expression, "Bullsh*t! What do you know about authenticity? This is the genuine Love in a Fallen City necklace!"

Cassandra sneered. "I sold the genuine Love

in a Fallen City necklace. How can I not know?

This necklace is fake!”

As soon as she said that, everyone in the

Assex family was confused.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 10

Of course, Spark would never admit that what he had given was just a fake necklace that was only worth two thousand dollars.

If he admitted it, wouldn't it be such a waste of his previous efforts?

He stood up abruptly, pointed at Cassandra, and said, "I don't know what is the relationship between you and that garbage Alex, for you to stand up for him, who are you to doubt the jewelry I gave? Do you know who I am?"

Cassandra sneered and said, "Of course I know who you are. You are a spoilt brat trying to take away Alex's family property. Frankly, everything you have now belongs to Lady Dorothy. You snatched her wealth and now give her a piece of fake jewelry to get her body, you are so shameless."

Now that she believed in Alex Rockefeller.

She even addressed him as father so naturally she would stand up for him.

Spark coldly snorted. "You kept saying that you sold the Love in a Fallen City necklace, then who did you sell it to?"

Cassandra answered, "It's..."

As she was about to tell them that it was Alex, she suddenly remembered his warning. His identity couldn't be revealed so she kept her mouth shut.

"Why

should I
tell you?"

Spark

was

furious.

He slammed the table, which shook the water in the glass. He looked at Madame Claire and said, "Madame Claire, I don't understand the relationship between you and her. She came here to maliciously fabricate information and slander me. If that's the case, I take it as I overreacted, but I can do nothing to help if Thousand Miles Conglomerate comes after you."

Cassandra scoffed. "I can guarantee you that Thousand Miles Conglomerate will never come after the Assex family..."

Before she continued...

Zr0tA

Madame Claire picked up her glass and splashed the red wine on Cassandra's face.

She scolded, "You there, what benefit did that trash Alex gave you to destroy Dorothy and Spark's wonderful marriage? Get out of here! Don't you dare to come to the Assex family again!"

Zr0tA

Then, she quickly said to Spark, "My dear son-in-law, calm down, she is a mad woman, she doesn't mind her manners, she doesn't even know a single thing about the thirty million dollars worth of jewelry! The jewelry you bought is the genuine one."

Cassandra was thoroughly wet and embarrassed. She looked at Lady Dorothy and suddenly laughed. "Dorothy, you will regret divorcing Alex."

She shook her head and said.

Lady Dorothy quickly stood up and apologized.

But Madame Claire yelled, "Regret my ass! Are you jealous of Dorothy, who will soon become the young lady of Rockefeller Group, but you, no one wants you yet?"

"Get lost! I'll beat you up if I see you again!"

Cassandra suddenly sympathized with

Alex.

Madame Claire was such a money-minded fool. A mother who was willing to sell her daughter. But the funny part was, she too made fun of Alex.

Madame Claire was a case of greed gone too far. She was beyond saving.

...

Hell's Angels.

Located on the most valuable land in the central city of California, it occupied an area of one hectare. It was the legendary largest and top-notch clubhouse in California.

Normally, it was only open to the executives of Thousand Miles Conglomerate. Otherwise, those who can enter the clubhouse were bigshots.

Alex took a taxi and told the driver to go to Hell's Angels, the driver looked at him in disbelief. He wanted to ask why he was going to Hell's Angels?

However, out of fear, he didn't ask a thing. Throughout the journey, he kept quiet.

He even turned off the radio.

Alex held the wedding ring while sulking.

He didn't bother about the driver's
expression.

Zr0tA

"Spark Rockefeller, you are so despicable and shameless, I will let you taste your own medicine.

"I will use the power of Thousand Miles Conglomerate to pin you to death.

"But that would be too boring! Let's have some fun and see what kind of tricks you can play!

"And you, Madame Claire, I will show you that Spark Rockefeller you're flattering is worth nothing to me!"

Come to think about it, he had figured it out.

Alex opened his eyes; it was filled

with resolute and confidence. He
had this capital now.

Soon after, they arrived at Hell's Angels.

After getting out of the car, Alex held his
head up high and walked towards the
door... "Stop!"

"Unauthorized
personnel cannot
enter Hell's Angels!"

A powerful and

fierce

voice shouted towards him.

Alex startled, and thought, 'It's not easy to enter the Hell's Angels, a single bellboy has such vigor.'

Legend had it that there are many masters, mercenaries, martial arts masters in

Thousand Miles Conglomerate...

Was he one of those?

However, he was the real

boss of Thousand Miles

Conglomerate. No matter

what type of master he was,

he still worked for him.

He stayed calm, and said gently, "I'm not an unauthorized person, I'm looking for Lord Lex Gunther!"

The bellboy was enraged. "Outrageous, who are you to address Master Lex by his name! Kneel and apologize!"

Alex frowned. "I'm looking for Lord Lex Gunther. He invited me here. Trust me. Go in and tell him that Rockefeller is here."

At this moment, a young man in a suit walked in arrogantly while whistling. He saw Alex being blocked at the door and said with a smile, "Oh, who is this? Isn't it the worst cuckold in California? Having a wife who doesn't allow her husband to touch her. An abandoned son of the Rockefellers."

Alex looked at him and did not recognize him at all. He said coldly, "Who are you?"

Who are you to judge me?" "D*mn!"

The man scoffed. "You still have a temper! I

hear that your wife is going to divorce you. Tsk tsk tsk. Your wife, Lady Dorothy is a real beauty. But are you happy after your wife remarried? Or unhappy?"

Alex looked at him coldly. "Tell me who you are!"

The young man laughed. "Hahaha, what about it? Do you want to take revenge on me? I'm so scared!"

He sarcastically said, "Listen well, I am Gaston Gates! I am the person your wife offended at the reception a few days ago! How about it, are you angry? Flipping out

for your confidence! Pity you, a cuckold, worthless to carry my shoes. Forget it, I don't want to fight with you."

Turns out, that was the Sir Gaston Gates.

This person was not a big shot, just a nephew of an executive in a subsidiary of Thousand Miles Conglomerate.

Therefore, Lord Lex

Gunther couldn't

recognize him at all. It took

a long time to look for this

person.

Then, Lord Lex Gunther called Alex up to

Hell's Angels.

What's funnier, Sir Gaston Gates had thought Lord Lex Gunther had called him up to the Hell's Angels for some good deed. He jeered at Alex.

Zr0tA

Alex sneered, "So it's you! Any last words?"

Gaston Gates was furious. "You fool, last word for whom? Believe it or not, I won't let you die peacefully!"

Alex shook his head. "I don't believe it!"

This was Hell's Angels, his playground. He believed that he could give him a lesson. At this moment there was another voice, "I don't believe it either!"

Gaston Gates was furious. "Which fool is saying he doesn't believe it?" He returned his head.

He saw who was talking and he was stunned. "MasterLex... Gunther?"

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 11

As Gaston began to recognize the old man standing behind, his facial expression took a drastic change.

The old man was the chief of Thousand Miles Conglomerate, and the alpha of the underground world, Lord Lex—Lex Gunther!

He did not have the guts to berate Lord Lex.

After all, he still valued his life.

Gaston stood frozen for a moment, as he

gathered his thoughts, he immediately

smiled and apologized, "Lord Lex, I'm so,

so, so sorry, I didn't know it was you!

Please be the bigger man that I know you

to be. Please forgive me for what I just

said. I know you're a large-hearted man.

Oh, I'm Gaston, you sent someone to call

for me? Is the purpose of this meeting to

assign additional tasks to me? Perhaps to

promote me to be a manager? I promise I will perform to the best of my abilities.”

Lord Lex’s face sank a little. His eyes were gloomy and cold.

He said in a monotone voice, “Let’s talk about it in the meeting room.”

When Gaston saw that Lord Lex had not lashed out at him, he felt a great sense of joy. Lord Lex could not hide his anger. He

was fuming and everyone could see it on his face. Gaston guessed it had something to do with Alex who was standing next to Lord Lex.

Gaston thought to himself, 'It's over for this fool!'

Zr0tA

Lord Lex spoke to one of the personnel standing at the door, "Please show him to the meeting room."

The man was startled but he still nodded respectfully in agreement.

Zr0tA

Lord Lex's gaze slowly turned towards Alex and he called out, "Master!"

The voice was not loud, but the one who person manning the door was welltrained in martial arts and had good hearing and sight. As he heard how Lord Lex had just addressed Alex, his body was frozen solid for a moment.

The security personnel thought to himself, "Master? Since when did the mighty Lord Lex have a master? Someone who

commands such respect from Lord Lex must be exceptional.”

As he recalled he had ordered the young man to kneel and apologize, he feared for his life. It's all over. Today's date would be marked as the anniversary of his death. The same could be said of Gaston walking next to him. The funny thing was, Gaston had no idea what just happened and was still joyously asking him, "Hey, what's your name? My name's Gaston Gates. The owner of Rainbow City is my uncle. I can't believe Lord Lex has called for me today. It

seems that I've managed to catch his attention. I think I'll be here often in the future."

The security personnel thought to himself, 'Be here often? There's still a question mark over whether you'll be leaving this place alive!'

Gaston continued, "Do you know who that fool is standing at the door? He's the son of William Rockefeller, the former boss of Rockefeller Group. His glory days are in the past and

he's merely a wimp who depends on women now. He's been married for a year, but his wife is still a virgin. In fact, she is about to be taken away from him. Isn't this a funny story?"

The security personnel remained silent. Gaston just hummed softly and did not speak another word to him. He cursed in his mind, 'Bloody fool, this guy is just another idiot. With the support of my uncle, I'll soon be among

the upper management of Thousand Miles Conglomerate, and when that time comes, all it takes will be a gaze from me and you'll be crushed!

Soon, they arrived at the meeting room. There was a person who was already kneeling in there as they walked in. Gaston laughingly said, "Who is this guy kneeling here? Did Lord Lex call for me to kick his..."

Gaston was not able to finish his sentence before the person kneeling on the ground turned around. "Uncle! It's you? Why are you kneeling?"

The person kneeling was John Gates, the owner of Rainbow City. He was the one who had signed the deal with Lady Dorothy, representing Assex Constructions.

"You b*stard!" John Gates screamed as he jumped up, walked across the room and slapped Gaston so hard that Gaston's

nose started bleeding. Hewas furious to see Gaston.

Seeing Gaston, John Gates was immediately furious, jumped up, and slappedhim so hard.

Gaston was shocked and he said, "Uncle, why are you hitting me?"

"I will kill you!" John roared as he rushed forward, punching and kicking. At this moment, Alex and Lord Lex walked in

together.

“Kneel down!” said John. “Immediately kneel to the master, grovel and apologize! Slap yourself while doing it!”

John Gates kicked Gaston so hard that he almost broke into two.

Gaston took a peek at Alex’s expressionless face. He was confused. He pointed at Alex and shouted, “Uncle, are you crazy? I can overlook the fact that you hit me for no reason, but why

do you want me to apologize to this dog?

Do you know who he is? He's just a wimp, a worthless piece of shit. He does not deserve to kneel to me!"

Zr0tA

Alex's facial expression did not change.

He's already gotten used to such insults

from Madame Claire over the past ten

months.

Zr0tA

He had often heard this from Madame Claire's mouth in the past ten months, and he was used to it.

Lord Lex showed his killing intent and said coldly, "John Gates, you've helped raise a wonderful nephew!"

As Lord Lex spoke, the surrounding air froze. John's heart ached and he had to make a decision on the spot. "Master Lex," John said, "It is my fault for not teaching him well. I will deal with this

animal myself.”

“What?” Gaston could not believe that his uncle had thrown him under the bus.

“Uncle John! Please do not go crazy! I’m your only nephew!” Gaston shouted.

John let out a sigh. He was actually hitting Gaston to protect him. He wanted him to show remorse so that Lord Lex might just spare his life.

However, it didn’t work according to his plan—his stubborn

nephew just didn’t understand the situation

and John could only save himself.

“You filthy animal!” shouted John. “You should not have made an enemy of Master Alex and coveted his wife! Today will be the last day of your life!”

“What?” Gaston responded in shock, “He’s no master. He’s just a piece of garbage!”

Lord Lex sneered. “He is the son of an old friend of mine. You treat him as you treat me. Do you think I’m a piece of garbage

too?"

Gaston's eyes opened wide and his mouth was gaping like a dead goldfish. He finally realized his mistake.

Zr0tA

He was really going to pay with his life for
his stupidity!

Zr0tA

Gaston quickly kneeled and said, "I'm sorry Master Alex! I'm just putting up an act for money. Master Alex, I'm not really lusting for your wife to accompany me."

Alex was stunned for a moment, and Spark Rockefeller came to mind.

"Now tell me, who is behind the whole ordeal?" Alex asked while his gaze pierced through Gaston.

Gaston knew the trouble he was in and

dared not to hide anything from Alex. He said, "It's Spark, the bastard said that as long as I did this favor for him, he would give me 10 million dollars and three beauties! I was blinded by my greed. I promise I will never do it again. Master Alex, please spare my life! I swear, from now on, I am willing to be your lap dog. May I be struck by lightning if I'm lying to you."

Alex was full of murderous intent. It was really that son of a b*tch Spark that was behind all of this.

CHAPTER 12

Lord Lex kicked Gaston and shouted, "It's too late to beg for mercy now! Drag him out and drown him."

The security guard lunged forward. At this moment, Gaston's desire to live kicked into overdrive. He groveled over and over again. His forehead was split open by the force and blood gushed out. Gaston

shouted, "Lord Lex, please spare my life!
Uncle John, please help me! I know I was
in the wrong. I really do. Master Alex,
please spare me!"

The sight was difficult for John Gates to
bear, but he could not mutter a word.

Alex glanced at Gaston and said, "Keep him
alive, he could still be useful to us."

Upon hearing Alex's words, gratitude was
written all over John's face. He quickly

kicked Gaston and said, "Quickly thank Master Alex. Remember, he'll be your master from now on!"

Gaston hastily groveled and said, "Thank you! Thank you Master Alex!"

Lord Lex could not hide the anger in this voice and said, "Spark Rockefeller, he deserves a terrible death for his atrocities. I will send someone to bring him here. We will tear his body from limb to limb!"

In his mind, Alex wanted to see how Spark would react once everyone knew what he had done. He also wanted to see the look on Madame Claire's face when she realized she had been made a fool of.

Zr0tA

He waved off his hand and said, "Hold it for now. I will deal with Spark personally. Isn't he trying to act like a hero, a good savior? I will ruin his reputation and his life."

Zr0tA

Then he solemnly said to Gaston,
“Remember, don’t you dare tell anyone of
my identity. If my mother-in-law knows
about it, I will make sure you swim with
the fishes.”

Gaston hurriedly replied, “Yes, yes, my
lips are sealed! Master, you are smart,
playing dumb to serve the best dish of
revenge to Spark!”

Alex was amused as Gaston was buttering
him up with flattery while blood was still
flowing down his forehead.

In Alex's mind, the person that he wishes to deal with first was Madame Claire. He planned to disgust her by pretending to be poor and not agreeing to a divorce. That should tick her off!

"Alright, we will contact you once you're needed. For now, make yourself scarce," said Alex to Gaston.

"Yes Master, I will definitely cooperate and help you to humiliate spark! I never really liked him to begin with. He's only playing

hero with money that he stole from you.

He is nothing compared to you.”

Alex added, “Please issue an official apology to my wife from Rainbow City so that she can rest at ease. Do you know how much she has suffered due to your actions? Even if I killed him ten times over, you will still be unable to redeem yourself.

Alex was not in a hurry to go home. He only had half a chicken drumstick; he was not feeling full yet. Accompanied by Lord Lex, Alex had a bountiful feast for lunch. Then,

they took a walk in Cali Mall before heading home in the Rolls-Royce Phantom, which had to stop a stone's throw away from the Assex's villa.

Zr0tA

He just ate half of a bowl of salad in the afternoon and his stomach was not full yet.

Accompanied by Lord Lex, he had an extravagant lunch, and then walked around in Hell's Angels.

Zr0tA

After that, he took the Rolls-Royce Phantom car, got off at a few hundred meters away from the Assex's residence, and walked slowly to the villa.

As Alex walked towards the villa, he saw some bags scattered in front of the villa's gates. Upon closer examination, it turned out that all his belongings had been thrown out. There was a broken photo frame on the ground too. It held Alex's family portrait of himself and his parents. It had a clear footprint on it; someone obviously stepped on it deliberately.

Alex was enraged and he stormed into the villa yelling, "Who did it? Who stepped on my family portrait?"

Madame Claire, Lady Beatrice, and Spark Rockefeller were in the livingroom when Alex stormed in.

Madame Claire angrily replied, "I did it! So what if I did? You, piece of trash is about to be divorced, why are you still staying at our house?"

Alex's eyes were cold and menacing, it was the first time Madame Claire had seen him this way, making her feel uneasy. She fearfully asked, "What are you going to do? Have you gone crazy? Are you going to murder me?"

Lady Beatrice quickly grabbed Madame Claire and said, "My mom stepped on it accidentally."

Alex blinked and laughingly said, "Mum, you are my mother-in-law, why would I

want to kill you? Don't worry, I will treat you well for the rest of my life and serve you while living and give a proper burial after death."

When Madame Claire heard it, she was so angry that she was hovering between life and death.

She screamed, "Son of a b*tch! Are you daydreaming? Who is your mother? You can go and give a proper burial for your mother!"

Alex said, "You are my mother!"

"You... get divorced right away, Beatrice, call your sister and tell her to go to the registrar of marriage office immediately."

Alex shook his head and said, "Mum, there's no need for that. Dorothy and I

would not get divorced. Don't you wish to have the Rockefeller family's power? I'm afraid if we get divorced, you will not get what you wish for."

Spark stood up and said, "Alex, I really didn't expect that you to really behave like a dog! You still want to continue to milk your relationship with Dorothy for money? It's just a waste of money keeping you and your mother alive. Let's just cut to the chase. If you and Dorothy file for divorce, I will give you another additional one million dollars. I

will personally see to it that you get a cleaning job in Rockefeller Group. I heard you have been a wonderful nanny here at the Assex family, I guess you do have a talent for cleaning.”

Before Alex could reply, Lady Dorothy came running in. The sound her pumps were making was loud and clear. As Lady Dorothy walked in, she happily shouted, “Mom! It has been resolved!”

Madame Claire was confused and asked, “What has been resolved?”

“The problem with Thousand Miles Conglomerate.” Lady Dorothy replied.

“John Gates, the man in charge of Rainbow City called me personally and said that he knew of Gaston’s evil deeds and had already given him severe punishment. He ensured that no one from their group will harass us again. I’m so relieved!”

As she spoke, tears fell from her eyes. Only
god knows what she had to go through
these past two days.

Zr0tA

Thousand Miles Conglomerate was putting too much pressure on her. The incident with the Thousand Miles Conglomerate was not the only thing exerting pressure on her, but when her own family found out about this, they didn't help her at all.

Instead, they told her to sleep with Gaston as an apology.

Additionally, there was also pressure from Spark and her disappointment in Alex.

She was on the very edge of breaking down.

Alex's heart sank when he saw Dorothy in this condition. He walked towards Dorothy and said aloud and earnestly, "Darling Dorothy, as I told you, everything will be okay. I will protect you. Whoever dares to bully you will have to step over my dead body."

At this moment, Spark was glaring daggers at him.

Lady Dorothy looked at him with teary eyes, and said, "Did you really help me solve it? Your father's friend already stepped in?"

"Of course!" Alex replied.

"Thank you..." Dorothy said, glad that the situation was finally over.

"Silly. We are husband and wife, I will protect you for the rest of our lives." Alex said as he reached his hand for Dorothy's face,

wanting to wipe her tears away.

Madame Claire who was standing next to them suddenly gave Alex a push. Alex was not prepared for her sudden action and fell to the ground. His

Zr0tA

arms hit the edges and corners of the coffee table, bruising and hurting him.

"Mom, are you crazy?" Lady Dorothy said as she quickly helped Alex up, "Alex, are you okay?"

Zr0tA

Madame Claire rushed over and pulled Dorothy away and said, "Who the hell is crazy? Do you think he's the one who helped you? What abilities does he have? All of this was resolved because of Spark!"

Spark was still in a state of confusion from the news. He was thinking, 'What in the world is Gaston doing? He took my money and yet he couldn't pull off his part of the deal?'

When he heard what Madame Claire had just said, he immediately chuckled and said,

“Yes, I called my dad to meet John Gates. Alex, stop pretending you are capable of anything. Have you forgotten that your dad was sentenced for corruption? What kind of person is still his friend? Don’t believe him Dorothy, he even lied about buying four million dollars worth of jewelry, but it turned out to be made of glass!”

Lady Dorothy’s heart was filled with suspicion when she heard what Spark had to say.

CHAPTER 13

Lady Dorothy trusted in Alex, but what Alex said was hard to believe. Most importantly, he had spent ten months not being himself, and that impression lingered on in her mind.

Alex stared at Spark coldly. "Again with the lies. I want to see until when you'd stop lying. Do you think your lies were flawless? Will you use the Thousand Miles

Conglomerate to force me to divorce

Dorothy? What kind of joke is that!

Thousand Miles Conglomerate's John

Gates, right? He was kneeling in front of

me just now, begging for mercy."

Everyone sneered. Even Lady Dorothy was disappointed in Alex, thinking he was lying.

Spark laughed loudly, "Alex, I didn't expect that you are really so delusional and had such hallucinations in your mind. John Gates of Thousand Miles Conglomerate kneeled before you? Why don't you say

that Lord Lex works for you?”

Alex sneered. ‘Lord Lex

Gunther does work for me.’

However, it was not time yet to

let the cat out of the bag.

He looked at Lady Dorothy and said,

“Dorothy, everything was caused by him. It

was he who gave Gaston fifty million

dollars and promised him three beauties.

He is trying to create a situation that will

force you to become his wife. Am I right,

Spark?”

When Spark heard it, there was a trace of panic in his eyes. Alex had just exposed the truth in front of everybody.

But at this moment, Madame Claire grabbed a broom, hit Alex on the head, and cussed, "Nonsense! It's all you, a bastard making up fairy tales in your mind! Stop spouting such nonsense. Fifty million dollars

and three women? Are you crazy? With so much money, he can get any woman he wants. Why would he do that just for a chance to get with my Dorothy?"

Alex grabbed the broom and replied, "Because he is a pervert that wants to marry his sister-in-law."

Spark said angrily, "You must have gone insane, I'm not going to entertain you."

After that, Madame Claire started to hit

Alex furiously, chasing him out of the Assex's villa shouting, "Get out, get out, do not take a single step into our family home from now on!"

Alex tried to speak to Lady Dorothy that was still inside the house and said, "Dorothy, think about it, I can bear being treated like trash, I can be beaten and scolded by your mother, and I have never lied to you."

Bang! Madame Claire shut the gates.

Alex took a deep breath, trying to calm his impulsiveness and anger, and picked up his luggage that was thrown outside the house.

Spark smiled and looked at Lady Dorothy and said without shame, "Dorothy, look. My dad has helped you solve the problem, you can file for divorce today!"

Lady Dorothy was suspicious. "Spark, didn't you say that your dad wouldn't step in to help if I wasn't divorced? I

don't know who to trust now!"

Zr0tA

Lady Beatrice said, "Sister, are you possessed? Are you going to believe that crazy and delusional person?"

Spark then said, "You don't believe me, do you? I'll go to my dad and he'll prove it to you."

Zr0tA

He left in a hurry after saying that.

In fact, he was a little panicked and rushed to find Gaston to ask what the situation was.

Madame Claire quickly praised, "Good son-in-law, I believe you, tell him that I'm so thankful!"

Spark nodded, opened the door, and left.

Alex saw Spark getting into his

Lamborghini with a warm farewell from Madame Claire and Lady Beatrice.

“Ew, can you move faster? Clean up your things and get out of here!” said Madame Claire as she spat at Alex’s feet when returning inside.

Alex just finished packing up, he only took the things that were important for him.

He threw away the rest of his belongings and planned to buy new ones. After all, he now had an unlimited amount of money.

Just as he was about to leave, Lady Dorothy rushed over. "Alex, please don't leave!" said Dorothy. Alex stopped and turned around. He was disappointed that Dorothy still had doubts regarding what he said.

With a bitter smile, Alex said, "All my belongings have been thrown out, should I sleep at the gates if I don't leave?"

Dorothy replied, "If what you told me is true, there's no need for you to feel guilty. If you are not guilty, why should you leave?"

My mother is determined to let Spark into our family. If he's the person behind all of this, why don't

Zr0tA

you stay and protect me? What if my
mother drugs me before calling Spark
over?"

Zr0tA

As Alex mulled over it, that old witch may really be able to pull it off just for the sake of money.

Looking at Madame Claire, who was staring at him fiercely as a tiger, he nodded and said, "You are right, I shouldn't leave, I'm still your husband, and I will be your husband forever."

Madame Claire angrily rushed out with a broom.

Lady Dorothy stood in front of Alex and said, "Mom, if you want to kick him out, I will go with him. Maybe when our children grow up, I will come back to see you."

When Madame Claire heard it, she was dumbfounded and returned to the room angrily.

Deep down, she knew that Lady Dorothy could really do it, just like ten months ago, stab herself in the chest for Alex.

Lady Dorothy said to Alex again, "Prove it to me." Alex replied, "What do you want me to prove?"

Lady Dorothy said, "Prove that you can protect me in the future. Otherwise, you will still be driven away by my mother. I will still...become Spark's woman."

Alex smiled confidently and said, "Don't worry, I will prove it to you. I remember that two days from now will be the anniversary celebration of

Assex Constructions. The younger generation of the Assex family will compete with their annual performance. I have a gift for you before that.”

“What gift?” Dorothy asked curiously.

Zr0tA

"I would rather not say it but prove to you with my actions," Alex replied. Lady Dorothy was suspicious, but he didn't seem to be lying.

Then she asked, "Where is the wedding ring? Didn't you buy it back?" Alex quickly took the ring out of his pocket.

"Help me to put on!" Dorothy commanded.

Alex was very happy and shook in joy as he held her soft silky hands and gently put the ring on her finger.

Lady Dorothy knew that it was really her wedding ring. Her eyes were teary as she said, "Alex, I hope you are not lying to me. This is the second time I've asked you to put on the ring, and it's the last time. If you lose it again, it will be over between us."

Madame Claire rushed out again. "Let go, who gave you permission to touch my daughter? If you want to stay at my house, go cook, mop the floor, and handwash all the clothes."

Meanwhile, Spark called Gaston Gates,

“Gaston, what are you doing? Why didn’t you keep up your end of the bargain? You dropped the ball at the last minute.”

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 14

When Gaston received the call, he was having his wounds treated at the hospital.

His forehead was split open and his face was swollen. His whole body was blue and purple with bruises.

With every instance of pain that he felt, he kept cursing Spark in his mind. If it weren't

for helping that scheming bastard, he would not have ended up in his current condition. He just barely avoided being drowned.

When he heard Spark questioning him, he couldn't help but feel like cussing.

However, he remembered Alex's instructions and told Spark, "Don't ask me any questions about this, I have no answer for you. I'll be going overseas. You can handle the situation on your own."

Click! Gaston hung up on Spark and turned

his phone off and couldn't be contacted again. Spark was furious. His gut ballooned with rage. Gaston took his money but didn't do as he asked. However, Gaston was the nephew of the powerful John Gates, a person of high status within Thousand Miles Conglomerate and Spark did not have the audacity to do anything to Gaston.

Soon, he reached home. The Rockefeller family's home was a huge manor. On Alex's seventh birthday, his father William Rockefeller had spent a small fortune to purchase the manor as a birthday gift for

Alex. The irony was that as the rest of the Rockefeller family moved in, Alex and Brittany were kicked out of the house.

As soon as Spark entered, his grandfather, Bill Rockefeller smiled at him. "Where did you go, Spark? Your face looks gloomy and angry. Is someone

bothering you?

Let me help you.”

Spark instantly

replied, “Alex!”

Zr0tA

Bill Rockefeller snorted coldly. "That useless son of a b*tch? How can he mess with you in his current state?"

Alex was stunned. "Son of a b*tch? Grandpa, isn't Alex, my uncle's son?"

Bill's eyes blinked and he tried to back paddle, "What I meant was that he was the bastard that I kicked out of this house. Tell me, how did he mess with you?"

Spark said, "That piece of human garbage

obviously has no ability or power but refused to concede and divorce Lady Dorothy. Such a shameless guy! Disgusting!"

Bill's eyes lit up. "Spark, do you like that Lady Dorothy?" Spark admitted, "Yes, I want to marry her."

If this conversation had happened between any other grandfather and grandson, Spark would have been slapped for lusting over his own sister-in-law. But Bill was not any

other grandfather and he laughed. "Spark, you have finally grown up. That Dorothy Assex is indeed a beauty. It is unfortunate that she's married to Alex. Since you like her that much, then I will go to the Assex family's residence and help you convince the old lady of the Assex family. I believe that you will have her blessings."

"Really? Thank you, Grandpa!" Spark was happy to hear what his grandfather had said.

"You are my grandson, why wouldn't I help you? As long as you can give me a bunch of great-

Zr0tA

grandchildren! That Alex is completely useless. He's the dark horse of my Rockefeller family. Our reputation has been tarnished by his existence. He is not worthy of having such a wife."

At the same time, Alex had just sent a message to Lord Lex, instructing him to sign a big contract with Dorothy as soon as possible.

Thousand Miles Conglomerate was involved in practically every industry.

Just by signing a deal with them,

Dorothy would be able to stand tall with pride amongst the family elders.

Come to think of it, things had not been easy for Madame Claire in the Assex family. The head of the family was Madame Joanne, Dorothy's grandmother.

The old lady had three sons, Benny,

Anderson, and Henry Assex. Madame

Claire was the wife of the youngest son,

Henry Assex. When Dorothy was sixteen

years old, Madame Claire had caught him cheating with his secretary. The very next day, Henry had run away with his mistress. No one had heard from him ever since and no one knew if he's still alive. The old lady blamed Madame Claire for the disappearance of her son. She was never fond of Madame Claire in the first place and her opinion of Madame Claire had only gotten worse ever since. Joanne even disliked Beatrice and Dorothy for this very reason.

Soon, Alex received a response from Lord

Lex, "Noted Master. A contract worth a billion dollars will be finalized with Lady Dorothy tomorrow."

Alex couldn't fall asleep as his mind was filled with regret. He owed Dorothy too much and wanted to talk to her. He mustered up his courage and went to the second floor to look for Dorothy. The door was unlocked, and it was open. Alex peeked inside. "Dorothy..." He was shocked as he saw Madame Claire coming out of the shower with only a towel covering her body.

Madame Claire screamed, "You pervert!

Who gave you permission to come up

here? What do you intend to do in the

middle of the night? Get out!

Immediately!"

This caused a great ruckus in the Assex's

villa.

Madame Joanne welcomed two unexpected guests at the old Assex manor the next morning. The head of the Rockefeller family, Bill Rockefeller and Spark Rockefeller, the young director of Rockefeller Group had come to visit her. In comparison to the hugely influential and powerful Rockefeller Group, Assex Constructions was but a small company.

The old lady was surprised when she found out the reason for their visit. "Sir Rockefeller, our Dorothy is already married. Are you sure that your grandson wants to marry her?" she asked.

"Yes, it is Lady Dorothy that I want to marry!" Spark chimed in. "I've fallen in love with Dorothy at first sight. Besides, her marriage to Alex is only on paper, they've never been allowed to sleep together."

Madame Joanne replied, "Your reputation will be tarnished. I have another

granddaughter named Emma...”

Spark shook his head and said, “I only want Lady Dorothy.”

Bill Rockefeller smiled and chimed in,
“Madame Joanne, I hear that Assex
Constructions has not been doing too well
recently. I’m willing to help you tide over
your difficulties.”

Just as Bill finished his sentence, Anderson
Assex, the second son of Madame Joanne

ran in and said

with excitement, "Mom! We have just received confirmation that Thousand Miles Conglomerate will be signing a deal worth a billion dollars with us!"

"Oh, good news, really great news..." The old lady clapped her hands and said happily. She then looked at Bill Rockefeller with a dazed expression, "Sir Rockefeller, great! You've pulled the strings for Thousand Miles Conglomerate to sign a business deal with us. It's vastly admirable, old man, thank you! You have

my blessing for this marriage.”

Bill Rockefeller was shocked. He didn't even know anyone in Thousand Miles Conglomerate. However, it was a wonderful opportunity that fate had given him. Bill said, "It's just a small matter. Lord Lex of Thousand Miles Conglomerate is a personal friend of mine. I just asked for a small favor, nothing is too much as long as we can help the Assex family."

Madame Joanne smiled and said, "This is great! Spark, I like you very much.

Tomorrow will be the anniversary of our Assex Constructions. We will be hosting a banquet in celebration. Why don't I

Zr0tA

announce Dorothy's marriage to you and the banquet tomorrow?"

Spark was overjoyed and said, "Thank you, thank you Grandma!"

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 15

As they left the old Assex Manor, Spark looked admiringly at Bill, "Grandpa, I didn't know you were so well connected that even Lord Lex is your friend. You even managed to help pull the strings for a billion dollars contract so quickly! No wonder you were confident that the old lady would accept your proposal!"

Bill shook his head and said, "The billion dollars contract had nothing to do with me..."

"Huh?! Then didn't you just say..." Spark questioned.

"I was merely going with the flow," Bill interjected. "Fate has it to be our day. I didn't expect the Assex family could do business with Thousand Miles Conglomerate. It seems that someone powerful must be helping them. It is a brilliant move for you to marry Dorothy."

We might be able to connect with Thousand Miles Conglomerate through you in the future.”

Spark smiled and nodded in agreement.

The thought crossed his mind, who could be helping the Assex family? A billion dollars was no small sum.

Could it be Alex? He quickly dismissed the possibility. In his mind, Alex was just a useless person; there was no way he could pull it off. After all, no matter who it was, his marriage to Dorothy was going to be finalized the next day.

At the other Assex villa, Lady Dorothy received notification that Thousand Miles Conglomerate had offered the Assex Constructions a billion dollars deal and had specifically requested her to handle the

Zr0tA

negotiations of the contract. She couldn't believe it was real. After multiple confirmations, she finally accepted the good news to be true.

"Alex!" she thought. "He said that he is going to give me a big surprise! Could this billion-dollar contract be his doing?"

Lady Dorothy quickly went to the conference room to meet the representatives from Thousand Miles Conglomerate. It was as though a miracle had happened; the negotiations

went in her favor easily. It

Zr0tA

was as if the contract was a deal that fell from the sky. Assex Constructions would be able to obtain at least twenty percent larger profit margins than usual, and the deal would total at least three hundred million in profit for Assex Constructions.

As Lady Dorothy managed to sign the contract before the anniversary banquet, it was without a doubt that she would be the top performer and would receive a large performance bonus.

The representatives from the Thousand

Miles Conglomerate shook hands with Lady Dorothy, and said, "Thank you, Ms. Assex. The contract is set, I will take it back and go through the necessary process. It will be signed and stamped and be given back to you latest by tomorrow.

After bidding farewell with the representatives of Thousand Miles Conglomerate, Lady Dorothy felt as if she were in a dream. She immediately called Alex, "Alex, was that your doing? Is the billion-dollar contract from Thousand Miles Conglomerate the surprise you

wanted to give me?"

Alex grinned and said, "Are the negotiations finalized? That's great! I've owed you far too much over the past ten months. I will do my utmost to make it up to you. You'll have my full support from now on."

Upon hearing Alex's words, Lady Dorothy broke down and cried, "Alex, I do not ask for much. As long as you remain positive in life and have the guts to keep on living, I would stay by your side no matter if

we're rich or poor."

"I promise you!" Alex promised.

.....

Zr0tA

Meanwhile, the Assex family had also received the news that the billion-dollar contract had been successfully negotiated. They were extremely excited, especially when they learned of the various concessions ThousandMiles Conglomerate had made.

ZrOUA

The old lady of the Assex family took a bath before saying a prayer to God.

Assex Constructions was worth around two to three hundred million dollars. This single deal had doubled their net worth. The Assex family would catapult from a third-rate business family to a second-rate business family, which meant that the outlook for the future of their business had just become much better.

In the courtyard of the old Assex Manor,

a couple of young members of the Assex family juniors were gossiping.

“Dorothy actually managed to land the billion-dollar contract from Thousand Miles Conglomerate, I really don’t know how she managed to get it,” one said.

“I thought that I would be the top performer at this year’s anniversary celebration, but this deal has totally changed the game!”

“Dorothy Assex, it’s all just because she’s

a little pretty," said Lady Emma Assex, the daughter of Anderson Assex, who had never taken a liking to Lady Dorothy.

"You know, she is a married woman... But only on paper!"

Madame Joanne walked into the yard at that very moment and interrupted them,

"What wicked gossip are you guys spreading?"

Lady Emma replied, "Grandma, the billion-dollar contract sign by Dorothy is not due

to her efforts, right? Thousand Miles
Conglomerate took the initiative to come
to us, and that is due to our brand and
reputation. In fact, this deal should be
credited to all of us who helped to build up
the image of the

Zr0tA

company.”

ZrótA

The old lady put her hand on Emma's face and said, "Don't even think about it. This deal was brokered by the Rockefeller Family as dower for Dorothy."

"The Rockefeller family? Hasn't that trash Alex been driven out by the Madame Claire?" asked Emma.

"It's not Alex, it's the young director of Rockefeller Group, Spark Rockefeller!" Madame Joanne replied.

“What? Spark wants to marry Dorothy?!”

Emma exclaimed in surprise. All the other young members of the Assex family laughed in unison.

Lady Emma murmured softly under her breath, “That b*tch Dorothy. She is really shameless and willing to do anything just to become the young lady of Rockefeller Group.”

The old lady then said, “Emma, you go to the Ritz Carlton Hotel and raise the

profile of our banquet tomorrow to a more luxurious level. This time, we will have a bountiful dinner for all our guests and build on the momentum to further the ambitions of the Assex family! We would also announce the billion-dollar contract between Assex Constructions and Thousand Miles Conglomerate.”

The day flew by and Assex Constructions’ anniversary had arrived.

Madame Claire’s family had just finished their lunch. Madame Claire dropped the

plates and utensils on the dining table
and instructed Alex, "Clean up the table.
Do not leave a single drop of food!"

Alex ignored her comment. He had already
gotten so used to it over the past ten
months.

Zr0tA

“By the way, we will be attending Assex
Constructions’ anniversary banquet in the
afternoon. You don’t have to come. You’ll
only bring shameto our family.”

Zr0tA

Alex didn't want to go. The old lady of the Assex family Madame Joanne, didn't like him at all. It would be very awkward if he did show up. Additionally, he would rather not see them as they were worthless in his eyes.

Lady Dorothy quickly chimed in, "No, Alex must go! Grandmother just gave me a call and asked me to make sure Alex comes along."

Madame Claire said, "Is the old lady off her medication?"

But since it was *Madame Joanne's* request, she had to obey it. *Madame Claire* went up to her room to change into a more fitting outfit for the evening's event.

The Ritz Carlton Hotel was one of the finest five-star hotels in California. They had a grand and retro design which looked magnificent. At half past three in the afternoon, the main entrance was already flying a huge banner that said, "Warm celebration—15 years of *Assex*

Constructions.”

It was a grand event and many extremely famous and powerful guests arrived at the venue one after another. You see, Madame Joanne had let the news of Assex Constructions’ deal with Thousand Miles Conglomerate spread. Many were hoping to join in on the deal, while others showed up as a sign of respect for Thousand Miles Conglomerate.

When Madame Joanne saw that many of the rich and powerful were in

attendance, she was extremely pleased.

At this time, Lady Dorothy's family also arrived. Madame Claire dressed up elegantly, and she had the Love in the Fallen City necklace on.

Both Lady Dorothy and Lady Beatrice were also dressed elegantly; only Alex wore casual clothing, as if he were on a vacation.

As soon as they arrived at the entrance of the banquet hall, Lady Dorothy met Lady Emma.

Zr0tA

“Oh, it’s the bride! You’re actually late!” Lady Emma said with a teasing smile. “You are the starlet for the night! It’s okay for you to be late, but why did you bring him to this banquet?”

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 16

Lady Emma smiled and said, "You really don't have a clue? Interesting! You'll find out soon. By the way, congratulations in advance!"

Dorothy's and Alex's eyes met. They knew something bad was going to happen.

Alex had a bad feeling as he saw Spark in the

hall.

It was almost four o'clock and was already a crowd in the banquet hall.

Madame Joanne with rosy cheeks in a plain moon-white dress stood under the spotlight.

She stretched out both arms and everyone in the hall went silent.

“Today is the fifteenth anniversary of Assex Constructions. I would like to thank all of our business partners for your presence tonight.”

Clap....

Clap... Clap...

The crowd applauded.

“According to our usual practice, today, the younger generation of the Assex family will be rewarded based on their performance. But this time, there’s a little twist! Because, we have only one winner

today, and that's..."

Zr0tA

Madame Joanne paused on purpose.

Zr0tA

Next, a light shone on Dorothy.

“My beautiful granddaughter, Dorothy!”

“Dorothy has signed a contract worth a billion-dollar with Thousand Miles Conglomerate, so that makes her the winner of this year’s competition!”

“Dorothy, you did well. I’m very proud of you. Now, come up on stage.” At this moment, Dorothy became the center of

attention.

With the face of an angel and devilish figure, Dorothy looked like a symbol of purity and sex appeal.

Dorothy's face blushed, she held Alex's hand and walked toward the stage.

Alex wanted to let go of her hand, but she held on very tightly and said, "You deserve all the credit, you should come with me."

"Alright!"

Alex took her hand.

Seeing this, made many
men green with envy.

Finally, they went up on
the stage.

Zr0tA

Madame Joanne gave Alex a blank stare. "I only called for Dorothy. It has nothing to do with garbage like you. Why are you even here?"

Dorothy said hurriedly, "Grandma, Alex was the reason we managed to sign the contract with Thousand Miles Conglomerate. He was the one who helped me with this project. Without him, I couldn't complete this billion-dollar project."

Madame Joanne gave Alex a cold-

eyed stare. "Are you sure?" Alex

nodded, "Yes, Madame!"

Madame Joanne laughed. "Alex, you piece

of shit. How can you be so shameless to

take credit for this? The billion-dollar

contract with Thousand Miles

Conglomerate is your doing? How is that

even possible?"

Dorothy said anxiously,

"Grandma, what he said is true."

"Bullsh*t!"

Madame Joanne said sarcastically,

"Dorothy, you've been deceived by this

fraud. Do you know the meaning behind this billion-dollar contract? It's a wedding gift for you from Rockefeller Group's young director, Spark! Yesterday, I witnessed and heard with my own eyes and ears that the contract was signed with the help of the head of the Rockefeller family, Sir Bill Rockefeller! Alex, how dare you take the credit! Shameless!"

Both Alex and Dorothy were stunned.

While the rest of the guests in the banquet

hall burst into laughter.

Zr0tA

Then, Spark walked out, dressed in Armani, looking cool. He stood in front of Alex proudly.

“Why are you so shameless, Alex? Two days ago, you gave Dorothy a so-called Love in a Fallen City necklace. Then, you spread rumors about Gaston Gates having been taken care of. And now you’re taking credit for the contract? Excuse me?”

Then, Madame Claire appeared.

Without a word, she slapped Alex's face and shouted, "You're such a disgrace! Who are you to pull off a billion-dollar contract for Dorothy? Sure enough, full of lies! You're hopeless! You don't deserve to be my son-in-law!"

Alex had not expected Spark could be so shameless to this extent. How dare he spew nonsense in front of all the guests.

But the only thing he cared about was Dorothy. Dorothy's face turned pale and her eyes became

soulless. He hurriedly said, "Dorothy, don't believe a word that he said, he is lying, I can prove to you the billion-dollar contract was my doing."

"You rascal!"

Just then, an old man came up.

He was the head of the Rockefeller family,
Sir Bill Rockefeller.

Zr0tA

“Grand...Grandfather?”

Alex looked at Sir Bill Rockefeller in shock. He didn't expect Sir Bill Rockefeller to be there.

“Rascal, I'm not your grandfather!” Sir Bill pointed to Alex and scolded, “You're a disgrace to the Rockefellers! That billion-dollar contract was clearly my doing. It was for my grandson, Spark, to give to the Assexes as a wedding gift. It has nothing to do with you! You piece of trash! You don't

deserve to be a Rockefeller! Get lost!"

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 17

Alex felt humiliated by Bill Rockefeller.

He recalled what happened ten months ago, where his father William had also been humiliated. He said, "Grandpa, why are you lying? I don't understand. Both William and I are your family, but why are we an eyesore to you?"

“Why? Because both of you are
a disgrace to mankind!” Buzz—

Alex felt so heartbroken as if a knife
stabbed right through it. Tears rolled down
his cheeks.

“Dorothy, please trust me, I’ve never lied.”
Alex looked at Dorothy with his lonely and
helpless eyes.

But Dorothy slapped him and said in
tears, “You disappoint me! I thought that
you’ve changed, but you’ve become more

despicable and shameless. You're such a terrible liar! I'm sick of you!"

She took off her wedding ring and threw it at Alex.

The ring hit Alex on his face then rolled down to the ground. Alex's face turned pale.

Dorothy's words rang in his ears.

Zr0tA

She had said that Alex wouldn't have the chance to put that ring back on her hand if she took it off again one day.

Disdain and insults from the guests were like swords stabbing through him. But Dorothy's contemptuous look hurt him the most.

Madame Joanne said, "Alex, all I ask of you is to divorce Dorothy tomorrow.

I've agreed to Spark and Dorothy's marriage! Now get lost! This is the

Assex's party, you're uninvited!"

“Wait, Grandma!”

Spark said, “He is Dorothy’s ex-husband. I want him to witness my proposal to Dorothy today.”

Madame Joanne smiled and said, “Very well, do as you please.”

Then, Alex was completely ignored. Alex witnessed Spark’s proposal to Dorothy.

Spark got down on one knee and asked,

“Dorothy, will you marry me?”

The crowd cheered, “Say yes! Say yes! Marry

him! Marry him!”

As Alex saw the proposal, his heart was in such anguish that he couldn't breathe.

Dorothy looked at Alex in disgust and

hate, then she slowly nodded. Just then,

someone shouted from the main

entrance of the hall.

“Lord Lex Gunther from Thousand Miles Conglomerate is here to congratulate the newlyweds!”

“Here are some presents for the newlyweds. A pair of golden jade horses, an ancient painting from the Ancient Egyptian Vase from the time of Hatshepsut, a suitcase with 9.9 million dollars of cash, and a billion- dollar contract!”

Everyone in the hall stood up instantly

after they heard the entrance of Lord Lex Gunther. They were in awe of the gifts he had presented.

Everyone wondered about the relationship between the Assex family with Lord Lex Gunther for him to present them with such extraordinary gifts.

The Assex family was thrilled.

Madame Joanne hurried over to welcome Lord Lex Gunther.

Lord Lex Gunther entered the hall accompanied by Sir John Gates, Sir Gary Gaston Gates, and a few executives of Thousand Miles Conglomerate.

Madame Joanne with a big smile on her face said, "Lord Lex, it's an honor to have you here, welcome!"

Lord Lex said, "Madame Joanne, it's my pleasure. May I ask, where's Mr. and Mrs. Rockefeller?"

Madame Joanne thought he had come for Spark. She felt so proud of Spark.

Zr0tA

“They are in the hall. He is proposing to
Dorothy now!”

Zr0tA

Lord Lex was curious. "Wow! I've never thought that Mr. Rockefeller is so romantic! Interesting! Come, I must see it."

Soon, they arrived in front of the stage.

Lord Lex Gunther, Sir John Gates, and Sir Gary Gaston Gates were stunned looking at Spark on one knee, with flowers and a ring in his hand proposing to Dorothy.

They were confused.

They had come here for Alex. Sir John Gates and Sir Gary Gaston Gates had specially come to apologize to Dorothy. Alex was nowhere to be seen, but they saw Spark proposing to Alex's wife.

Lord Lex puzzled and asked, "Madame Joanne, what's going on?"

Madame Joanne misunderstood his question. She smiled and said, "Spark is proposing to Dorothy! Aren't they the perfect match for each other?"

Sir John said, "If I remember correctly,
Dorothy is married to Mr. Alex..."

Madame Joanne pointed to Alex who was
being pushed to a corner and laughed,
"Are you referring to that trash? He is not
worthy to be Dorothy's husband! They are
getting divorced tomorrow."

Lord Lex had realized Alex stood at the
corner of the hall pitifully mocked. The
crowd then laughed.

“Alex is a piece of shit. Even his grandfather has disowned him.”

“Hahaha. Witnessing his wife about to marry another man and couldn't do a thing about it. How useless!”

“This trash doesn't deserve a wife at all! He should be alone for the rest of his life!”

As Lord Lex saw Master Alex being mistreated, tears rolled down his face. “Shut

up!”

Lord Lex roared and pushed Madame Joanne aside. “All of you are despicable! How dare you insult Master Alex!”

Lord Gunter was trembling. He hurried over, bowed to Alex, and said, “Master!”

The crowd that was initially laughing at Alex was shocked. Everyone kept quiet. They looked at Alex in confusion.

Alex took a deep breath and he slowly

looked up...

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 18

“What? Did Lord Lex actually address him as his Master?”

“Isn't Alex an outcast by the Rockefeller family? How can he be associated with Lord Lex who is worth a trillion dollars?”

“Is Alex the real owner of Thousand Miles Conglomerate? If that is true, he might be

the richest man in California or the richest man in America.”

“Oh my God, that’s a piece of big news! This is so entertaining!”

Everyone was astonished. They whispered to each other while looking onstage.

The whole Assex family was dumbfounded.

Madame Joanne’s body was trembling.

Madame Claire's eyes were popping out of her head with astonishment.

Dorothy covered her mouth. She was perplexed.

Alex looked at Lord Lex apathetically and asked, "Lord Lex, why are you here?"

Lord Lex replied, "Master Alex, I heard about the Assex family's annual banquet. I came to congratulate and at the same time, hand over the billion-dollar contract. But I didn't expect to see this."

Zr0tA

Alex glanced over at Dorothy and smiled bitterly. "I'm sorry for what you have seen."

He took the billion-dollar contract from Lord Lex and tore it in half.

Madame Joanne's eyes were red in anger. She rushed up and shouted, "Alex! What did you tear?"

Alex said gently, "This is the stamped billion-dollar contract from Thousand Miles Conglomerate."

"Ah!"

Madame Joanne shouted, "You son of a b*tch! How dare you tear up the contract? You're dead meat!"

Lord Lex took the torn contract from Alex's hand and tore it into pieces. Then he threw it on Madame Joanne's face, and roared, "You should be the dead meat!"

At that moment, there was pin-drop silence in the hall.

Madame Joanne felt the pain on her face. She panicked and asked, "Lord Lex, please calm down. What's going on? This billion-dollar contract should be a proposal gift from Spark to the Assex family! Bill!

Quick! Explain to Lord Lex that you pulled off the billion-dollar contract! It must not be torn!"

If the billion-dollar contract was torn,
there would be no guarantee for the Assex
family's wealth and status.

Madame Joanne pulled Sir Bill over, who
was standing next to her.

Zr0tA

“Haha, haha!”

Lord Lex laughed and stared at Sir Bill.

“What did you say? You pulled off the billion-dollar contract, to give the Assex family as a gift?”

Sir Bill had not expected

Lord Lex’s presence. He

kept quiet and dared not

make a sound.

Lord Lex slapped him angrily and said, “You

shameless old hag! Get lost! How are you

qualified to pull this off?”

Everyone started to doubt who was the one to pull off this billion-dollar contract.

Dorothy's eyes widened.

She started to doubt if it was really a present from her husband, Alex.

Madame Joanne panicked and asked,

“Lord Lex if it's not the Rockefeller family

who pulled it off? Who did?"

Lord Gates snorted coldly, "Are you out of your mind? This billion-dollar contract is a gift from Master Alex to Lady Dorothy! You don't deserve my compliment. I'm here for Master Alex!"

His statement struck like lightning! All doubts were cleared.

Slap!

Dorothy slapped Spark's face. "You liar!"

At that time, Gaston Gates took the opportunity to kick Spark. "Of course he is a liar!"

CHAPTER 19

Gaston immediately knelt before Lady Dorothy, "Mrs. Rockefeller, I'm sorry, I came to beg you for forgiveness. I was blinded by my greed and took fifteen million dollars from Spark to do his bidding; to deliberately cause a ruckus and threaten you, all for him to appear as if he's a hero. He wanted to steal you away from Master Alex. I was wrong, please forgive me."

Dorothy's eyes were filled to the brim with tears and she couldn't hold them back.

Snap!

Sir John forcefully grabbed the necklace on Madame Claire and threw it to the ground, breaking it and said, "This is a forgery of our Love in a Fallen City necklace. Not only is this illegal, it is also an insult to our company!"

Everyone was shocked by the revelation. Everything Spark had said was a lie. All of Alex's ridiculous claims were all true, but everyone had doubted him.

At that very moment, Alex felt frustrated. His mind was filled with the scene of Dorothy nodding in agreement to Spark's proposal. He shed a tear before leaving the hotel swiftly.

Dorothy was so distressed that she couldn't breathe.

Alex's earlier promise was ringing in her mind. "I've owed you far too much over the past ten months. I will do my utmost to make it up to you. You'll have my full support from now on!" However, she had not believed in him. She had chosen to believe in a scam.

Zr0tA

Dorothy was on the ground like a madwoman, frantically looking for the wedding ring that she had just thrown away. As she found it and put it back on, Dorothy ran out of the banquet hall shouting, "My dear husband, it was all my fault! Where are you?"

Madame Joanne was like a lost soul. "It is all over for us!" she thought. It was originally meant to be a great day, but it was all turned upside down. Not only did the Assex family suffer great humiliation in front of many important guests, but they

had also lost the billion-dollar contract and offended Thousand Miles Conglomerate.

Her dreams for the Assex family to achieve great heights had come to an end before it even started.

"All of this was caused by Bill and Spark Rockefeller!" Madame Joannethought. She furiously picked up her walking stick and started hitting Bill while screaming, "You damn liar! I'll kill you!"

After witnessing this mess, Lord Lex let out an apathetic sigh and left with all his

men and the gifts they had brought.

After leaving the hotel, Alex went to the hospital. It was the only place he could seek comfort. He wanted to massage his mother's limbs. It had become part of his daily routine for the past ten months. If a patient in a coma did not receive such treatment daily, they would experience muscle atrophy and osteoarthritis. Even if the patient did wake up in the future, they would be unable to move without significant work in physiotherapy.

Alex knew all of this as he had read many books, articles, and medical journals on taking care of a comatose patient.

Perhaps, he was more knowledgeable regarding the subject than most nurses.

At this time, Dr. Cheryl walked in for her routine visit before going off work.

Alex saw that she was wearing the Love in a Fallen City necklace that he had given her. It really suited her beautiful face and the combination could only be described as angelic.

Zr0tA

When Dr. Cheryl saw Alex, she smiled and said, "Alex, the glass jewelry that you had gifted me is really beautiful. Many people had been asking where I bought it!"

"Uh," Alex didn't know how to respond to Dr. Cheryl's comment. He was dumbfounded.

Dr. Cheryl didn't pay much attention to his response or lack of it and conducted the usual checkups for Madame Brittany. As she finished her work, Dr.

Cheryl suddenly asked, "Alex, are you free tonight?"

"Why?" Alex replied.

"I want you to be my boyfriend," said Dr. Cheryl.

"Huh?" Alex was stunned.

CHAPTER 20

Alex was frozen. She was stunning and her beauty did not pale in comparison to Dorothy's. But Dr. Cheryl's figure was more voluptuous. Alex felt like he was dreaming. He thought to himself, 'Does she know that the necklace is actually genuine and is worth thirty million dollars? Maybe she's keeping quiet about it but is now aggressively pursuing me!'

As Alex kept thinking, he wondered if Dr. Cheryl was lonely for the night. Should he agree to her request? As he recalled what had happened earlier, his heart was in anguish and he just couldn't get over it. He decided to agree to Dr. Cheryl's request.

Dr. Cheryl said, "Well, I have a school reunion dinner tonight and there's this guy who has been pursuing me for some time. I find him annoying. I would like you to pretend to be my boyfriend and make

him stop. Would you be willing to help me?"

Dr. Cheryl was aware that Alex was married and wouldn't misunderstand her request. She wouldn't have asked another person.

Alex was a little startled but replied smilingly, "I get it, so this would be just to get rid of a pest. Alright, I'll help you out."

He looked at her seductive body and felt a little disappointed yet relieved. What

was he thinking? He was a married man.

Suddenly, Alex's phone rang, and it was a call from Dorothy. It was already her thirteenth call but he's not ready to speak to her yet. As he recalled the scene of Dorothy nodding in agreement to Spark's proposal, he was in

Zr01A

despair once again. He decided to switch off his phone so that he could have some time to regain his inner peace.

Dr. Cheryl saw it all, she smiled and said, "Alex, what's going on between you and your wife? Is it true that you both still sleep in separate rooms?"

Alex replied,

“Did Chloe

tell you

that?” Dr.

Cheryl just

nodded.

Alex said angrily, “She is such a busybody.

Why isn’t she here today?”

Dr. Cheryl shook her head. “I don’t know, I

heard that she had an injury and took a few

days off.”

Alex just smiled. He knew what had happened to her. She was slapped by the security guard at the L.G. Balfour store and her face was all swollen. She also had a huge fight with her greasy boyfriend. Alex assumed those were the causes of her injury.

Dr. Cheryl said, "I don't mean to be nosy, but I think that you should have an honest talk with your wife. If you can find common ground, then you can live on well together. Otherwise, just end the relationship quickly. There's no need to prolong both of

your suffering.”

Alex just smiled because he did not know how to react.

Dr. Cheryl was finally done with her work and was ready to leave. She politely asked Alex to wait for her to get her clothes changed. Ten minutes later, Alex could not believe what was in front of his eyes. Dr. Cheryl was no longer wearing her doctor's gown. She had changed into a figure-hugging black striped dress that showed

off all her curves. She had let her silky-smooth hair down and her long pair of slender legs could be seen. On top of that, she was wearing the Love in a Fallen City necklace that Alex had given her. She could only be described as a goddess among goddesses.

Zr0tA

Her voluptuous figure was extraordinary. With the figure-hugging dress, she's basically men's kryptonite!

She noticed Alex staring at her and she immediately blushed, turning bright red.

"What are you looking at, silly?" She asked.

ZROVA

Alex wiped his chin as if there were saliva running down. "Dr. Cheryl, you are really... Really beautiful."

Dr. Cheryl happily replied, "From this moment onwards, you are pretending to be my boyfriend, call me Cheryl."

"Alright, good!" Alex answered.

The pair headed out the door and left Dr.

Cheryl's office. On their way down, the elevator was very crowded. When it stopped on the fifth floor, a delivery person entered, and the crowd had to squeeze to make space for him. Dr. Cheryl lost her balance and could only lean against Alex.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 21

At that instant, Alex felt happiness come knocking.

Deep down in his heart, he thought when God closed one door, He opened another.

Dr. Cheryl had wanted to leave, but she couldn't move an inch. She felt embarrassed and blushed.

When they arrived on the first floor, they walked out of the elevator. Dr. Cheryl glared at him and whispered, "Don't you dare to mess with me again!"

Alex was aggrieved and said, "Cheryl, the fault is not mine."

At half-past five, they arrived at Urasawa Restaurant. There were not many customers in the restaurant. But the cars that were parked in front of the

restaurant were all high-end luxury cars, and cars that's worth tens of millions.

"Urasawa Restaurant is the second most expensive restaurant to dine in in California."

"Seems like you have wealthy classmates to have a reunion gathering here!" Alex said with a smile.

Dr. Cheryl pouted. "The one who invited us here is the guy I dislike the most, and you're going to deal with him tonight."

"Okay," Alex replied.

He knew the guy she mentioned was the one who had a crush on her.

Right at that time, someone from behind shouted, "Cheryl!"

Alex saw a young man in a decent suit.

He had a slim body figure and he looked excited but slightly nervous.

"Are you... Chris Feller?" Dr. Cheryl asked.

"Yes, I am! I'm glad that you still remembered me! But who is this?" Chris looked at Alex anxiously.

Chris was so shy that he couldn't look Dr. Cheryl in the eye.

Alex realized that the suit that Chris was wearing wasn't an expensive branded suit. The color of the suit had slightly faded as if it had been washed many times. Maybe he couldn't afford to buy a brand new one.

Dr. Cheryl said, "He is my friend, Alex."

"Hello, nice to meet you. My name is Chris

Feller.”

Alex shook his hand and replied, “Nice to meet you too.”

Dr. Cheryl asked, “Chris, did you come here alone? Where is your girlfriend?”

Chris said, “Oh, we broke up! How about him? Is he your boyfriend?”

With a smile on Dr. Cheryl’s face, she slowly put her arm around Alex’s arm.

Alex felt the strangely warm touch on his arm, and he was on cloud nine. Chris glanced at Alex and sighed silently.

The goddess of their class had been taken. He felt sad as he had a crush on her.

Then, a waiter guided them to the private dining room where the reunion was held.

As soon as Chris opened the door, he said excitedly, "Everyone! Look, who I brought?"

Someone immediately shouted, "Hey nerd, why are you all hyped-up? As if you manage to bring our goddess here."

Then, Dr. Cheryl who was hiding behind him said, "Hello everyone!"

The crowd in the private dining room cheered, which stirred up the atmosphere instantly.

"Is this really you, Cheryl Coney, the goddess of our class?"

“Well, well, well! It’s been a while, our goddess! We’ve missed you so much!”

“Come and sit next to Benjamin, he’s missed you the most! He was still wondering if you will attend tonight’s dinner!”

“Tonight’s dinner is Benjamin’s treat. Otherwise, we can’t afford to dine in here. I heard that this is the best restaurant owned by Thousand Miles

Conglomerate.”

ZrótA

The rest pushed Dr. Cheryl to sit next to Benjamin, which made her flustered.

Alex followed Cheryl and glanced at Benjamin. He wore exquisite Versace clothing, sat comfortably in his chair, and stared at Dr. Cheryl as she walked in.

Right then, a female voice said, "Hey, you bastards! Is Cheryl the only one qualified to be a goddess? Have you all forgotten about me?"

It was a slightly plump woman with a normal-looking appearance. While talking, she pushed Alex away, looked at him in disgust, and said, "Cleaner, leave the room! You're in my way! We'll ask for you when we need you! Get lost now!"

Alex frowned.

Dr. Cheryl grabbed Alex's arm and said resentfully, "Britney! He is not a cleaner, he is my friend!"

Britney was startled. "Your boyfriend?"

At the same time, Benjamin looked at Alex with animosity.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 22

Cheryl with a pair of beautiful eyes rested her head on Alex's shoulder and smiled. "Well, Alex, my boyfriend. What do you think? Are we meant for each other?"

Dr. Cheryl was so beautiful. Many men would dream of having a wife as beautiful as her. Every single move she made captured the hearts of men in the room.

Benjamin looked at Alex with so much hatred as if he could kill Alex with his eyes.

Everyone else in the room was confused and looked at Benjamin.

Then, a man jumped out and said, "Are you kidding, Cheryl? A blind man could see that Benjamin has strong feelings for you! How could you choose a 'nobody' over Benjamin!"

Some in the room nodded.

“Yeah, he’s right! Benjamin is a young director of Golden Light Group. He’s worth several billion dollars. Whoever marries him can live in peace for the rest of their lives. Who is this man next to you? He is so poorly dressed as if he works at a construction site. How is he worthy of a goddess like you!”

“I’m way better than you are. If I still don’t deserve to be given the chance to be Cheryl’s boyfriend, how could you deserve

it?"

ZrótA

“Stop kidding, Cheryl! He doesn’t deserve to be your boyfriend!” someone from the crowd shouted.

The crowd became more furious and kept insulting both Dr. Cheryl and Alex.

Zr0tA

Alex stayed calm. He glanced at Dr. Cheryl and said earnestly, "Love is more valuable than money. Cheryl accepted me because she knew that my love for her is true. She believes that I will be true to her in good times, sickness, and health. I will love and honor her all the days of my life.

Moreover, who knows

if I will be the richest man in the world in the next few years!"

"Oh please! Cut it out, can't you! That wedding vow makes me sick!"

“Richest man in the world my ass! Even Lord Lex Gunther won’t approve of that. Why should we believe you?”

“Cheryl, where did you find this piece of shit? Is he a patient from your clinic whom you asked to pretend to be your boyfriend just to annoy Benjamin? Please kick him out, it’s making me sick!”

Cheryl said angrily, “Enough! How could all of you insult my boyfriend! I’m leaving. Alex,

let's go."

Finally, Benjamin stood up from his chair. He placed his hands on the table and said, "That's enough. From now on, no more nonsense from anyone. Since he is Cheryl's friend, then he will be our friend too."

The crowd ate out of Benjamin's hand. They shut their mouths and kept quiet.

Britney rolled her eyes, and immediately

laughed. "Now that is how a real gentleman behaves! You bunch of useless men are just jealous of Cheryl being taken. Look! Even Benjamin could accept them with open arms, why couldn't you do the same?"

Britney said that to help Dr. Cheryl relieve the tense atmosphere.

It was a reunion gathering after all. Dr. Cheryl had no choice but to look at Alex apologetically and hinted at him to sit down.

Everyone started to chat again. But the topic revolved around flattering Benjamin.

Alex couldn't be bothered to listen to those flattering words. Instead, he indulged in the scrumptious food by Urasawa Restaurant.

“Alex, this steak is very delicious. Try it!”

Dr. Cheryl passed him a piece of steak with a big smile on her face.

Alex nodded. “Mmm... It tastes good! This fish is delicious too! Here, have more! It’s good for your health too!”

“Okay! Here! Eat this. It will help to keep your kidney healthy.” Dr. Cheryl replied.

Both Dr. Cheryl and Alex continued feasting without bothering about what'shappening around them.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 23

As Benjamin saw Dr. Cheryl and Alex enjoying their dinner, he looked at Alex with fiery eyes.

The main reason Benjamin had organized this reunion gathering was to pursue Cheryl. He couldn't bear to watch Dr. Cheryl and Alex enjoying their sweet moments over dinner.

Bootlickers of Benjamin noticed his anger. Then, they turned and looked at Dr. Cheryl and Alex.

Britney said, "Hey, your name is Alex, right? Have you never tasted such delicious food before? Do you usually eat lunch at the construction site? What is your occupation?"

After Alex finished swallowing a piece of meat, he replied, "I don't work at the construction site. I'm currently

unemployed.”

Everyone laughed.

Benjamin looked at Dr. Cheryl in deep thought. Since Benjamin had pursued Dr. Cheryl for years, he knew that Dr. Cheryl was a kind-hearted person.

She had great insight into choosing the best partner for herself. Dr. Cheryl wouldn't choose a person who was at the bottom of the social hierarchy like Alex as her partner. Benjamin thought, maybe Dr. Cheryl and Alex were putting on an act to

test his patience.

So, he pretended to be generous. "Is the food enough? Let me order more for you.

Are you looking for a job? A true man should be responsible for

Zr0tA

his

future.”

Everyon

e

smiled.

Zr0tA

Britney looked at Alex and said,
"Benjamin, it's hard for some to get a job
in this competitive society. Didn't Golden
Light Group establish a new subsidiary
recently? Maybe you can help Alex by
arranging for him a cleaner position in
that company. It's better than being
jobless, staying at home all day."

Benjamin shook his head, "No, I can't.
Cheryl's friend is also my friend. He should
at least get a white-collar job. Hey Alex,
what is your profession? Let me arrange
a decent position for you."

Alex sensed Benjamin's sarcasm. Benjamin was just trying to amuse himself at Alex's expense. He rolled his eyes and said, "No thanks. I'm fine."

Britney sneered and said, "You really can't tell chalk from cheese. Or do you really enjoy staying at home being jobless?"

"He is gluttonous and lazy!"

"You're a good-for-nothing! Stop dreaming about becoming Cheryl's

boyfriend!”

“Cheryl, where did you find this piece of shit? Are we a fool for you?” Insults after insults were heard from the crowd.

When Britney was about to excuse herself to the washroom, Benjamin said, “Well, we have our own aspirations. Alex already mentioned that he doesn’t want to work, let’s not mention it anymore. Let’s talk about the news subsidiary. This new subsidiary is a partnership with Thousand Miles Conglomerate. It’s a huge company. We are recruiting five thousand

employees and we are still short of managers. If anyone is interested do let me know. I'm sure we can offer you some decent positions."

A woman replied, "I never knew it was a partnership with Thousand Miles Conglomerate. That's incredible. Thousand Miles Conglomerate is the largest group and strongest in the underworld of California.

Benjamin, I'm interested!"

“Count me in too.”

“Me too! Benjamin, you’re our life-saver.”

Flattering words continued to flood the hall. Benjamin looked at Dr. Cheryl arrogantly, but Dr. Cheryl put down the cutlery in her hand and stood up. “Sorry, I have to excuse myself. I have night duties to attend to.”

“Cheryl, why are you leaving so soon?”

Benjamin frowned. He was confused. It turned out to be different from what he thought. He thought that Dr. Cheryl should have continued her act with Alex and waited for him to ask permission from her to be his girlfriend.

"Sorry, my patient is waiting for me. Alex, let's go!" Dr. Cheryl said. Alex stood up, nodded, and burped after being full of dinner.

Alex completely ignored all the

mockeries and focused on his act as Dr. Cheryl's boyfriend. He was happy that he had a great meal for free!

Right then, there was a scream at the door, followed by a slapping sound. Then, a woman ran into the room in a panic, her clothes were torn.

It was Britney who had gone to the washroom. A man came in after her and cursed.

CHAPTER 24

“Britney, what happened?”

Benjamin frowned while he stood up and asked.

Britney tried to cover her torn clothes that exposed her skin. She pointed at the middle-aged man who came in and

shouted, "That bastard, molested me."

The man yelled angrily, "B*tch, who molested you? Hurry up, take out my..."

Before he could finish his words, a bootlicker of Benjamin, Dylan Minette, jumped and kicked the middle-aged man in the chest. The man fell to the ground.

"Goddammit! Who released this maniac? How dare you molest Britney! Why don't you molest your own sister!"

Other men also stepped forward. They punched and kicked the man. Then they kicked the man out of the dining room.

Dylan laughed and said, "You son of a b*tch!

Let me teach you a lesson!

Don't you dare to do it again!"

"Way to go, Dylan!" the crowd cheered.

Alex shook his head. Others might not notice, but he noticed that the middle-aged man wasn't any ordinary man. He wore a custom hand-made shirt from Italy with a small dark plum blossom cufflink.

Zr0tA

His father used to have one of them. He knew that it was worth three million dollars.

For someone who could afford this shirt couldn't be anybody.

Besides, he knew Britney was lying from her expression. It couldn't be that simple. Many pretty women would voluntarily present themselves to a man that could afford a shirt worth three million dollars

like him. How would he fancy Britney with such an ordinary appearance?

To prevent them from getting into something bad, Alex reminded them, "He might be an extraordinary person, I think you guys should back off."

Unexpectedly, Dylan sneered and said, "Of course you will think that he is extraordinary. Who else in this room is not extraordinary to a low-ranked person like you! You're such a coward! Get lost! You're nothing but a

toy-boy!”

A woman said, “Yeah! Even if that person is somebody, so what? This place belongs to Thousand Miles Conglomerate. No one would dare to cause trouble here. Right, Benjamin?”

Benjamin said proudly, “Yes! The manager of this restaurant, Ramsay knows me. He respects me. Don’t worry about it.”

Alex shook his head and said to Cheryl, “Let’s go.”

However, just as they were about to leave their seats, the door of the room was kicked open. About seven to eight security guards of Urasawa Restaurant rushed in aggressively, followed by several well-dressed men. One of them was the middle-aged man that had been beaten up just now.

With an electric baton in his hand, the chief of security yelled, "Whoever stole Mr. Edgar's diamond ring, take it out immediately! Also, whoever hit Mr. Edgar just now, show yourself."

Everyone in the dining room was shocked to see such a scene.

Even Dylan who had shown courage initially was trembling. He was shaking like a leaf as he saw the chief security's furious look.

Britney lowered her head
and her face turned pale.

“Hurry up!” The chief
security roared again.

Many people looked at Benjamin hoping that
he could do something about it.

Benjamin noticed a man behind the security
guards. It was Manager Ramsay from
Urasawa Restaurant. He immediately
walked towards him and said, “Manager
Ramsay, I’m Benjamin Smith from Golden

Light Group. I believe there must be a misunderstanding!”

Unfortunately, Manager Ramsay, who was usually polite to him, didn't reply. Instead, he stared at him coldly.

Benjamin felt that something was wrong.

The middle-aged man who was beaten up jumped out, pointed at Britney, and said, “That's her! That b*tch stole my diamond ring and slapped me!”

Two security guards immediately rushed over and held Britney up.

Zr0tA

Britney struggled desperately, but she couldn't break free. She asked Benjamin for help repeatedly, "Benjamin, please help me! I didn't steal the diamond ring! Please save me!"

Benjamin was the host of this dinner gathering. If words about him being a coward spread, it would ruin his reputation and Dr. Cheryl might look down on him.

As he was about to say, "Manager Ramsay, my dad is..." Manager

Ramsay glared and interrupted,

“Don’t be a fool, liar.”

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 25

Benjamin's heart trembled when he heard Manager Ramsay's warning. He didn't dare to continue speaking a word after that.

Everyone else was afraid to speak after they saw Benjamin kept quiet. Especially those who had beaten up the middle-aged man just now, they were shivering.

“This bastard was the one
that hit me the hardest.”

The man said while
pointing at Dylan.

Another few security guards immediately
arrested Dylan with his hands
cuffed behind.

“Where is my diamond ring? Give it back to
me!” The man stared at Britney coldly.

“I... I didn't steal it.” Britney said in fear.

Manager Ramsay replied, "How about you admit it and give back the diamond ring. You can't deny what you've done. There are surveillance cameras in our restaurant which have recorded everything."

Britney shook her head in denial.

The furious middle-aged man tore Britney's clothes and roughly searched her body.

Britney yelled and burst into tears, seeking help from Benjamin desperately.

Zr0tA

But Benjamin stood there and did nothing.

Alex took revenge by standing by and watched what happened to Britney who had mocked him a while ago.

Dr. Cheryl was kind-hearted. She couldn't bear watching her classmate being bullied. When she was about to speak, a ring fell out of Britney's pants. It fell to the ground and made a tinkling sound.

It was a diamond ring. From the looks of it, the diamond at least weighed five carats, which was worth more than ten million dollars.

Dr. Cheryl was astounded.

She swallowed her words.

Everyone else was astounded too.

They didn't expect Britney to steal and hide the diamond ring here. Who

knew that

she was a

thief! Bam!

Bam! Bam!

The man punched Britney in her face and kicked her, "What is this? Are you a magician? Can you make this ring that cost twenty million dollars to appear out of nowhere?! You filthy thief!"

Britney cried, "I picked it up from the washroom."

Alex shook his head. Being caught red-handed for a twenty million dollars worth of diamond ring, no wonder Britney took

the risk to deny it. Did she

Zr0tA

really think that she could possess the
diamond ring that she had picked up from
the washroom?

Zr0tA

Manager Ramsay slapped Britney. "Take her out, I will deal with her later."

Edgar beat Dylan up as revenge. He punched Dylan's face with his fist. Then he grabbed the electric baton and swung it hard onto Dylan's leg.

Crack! Dylan's calf bone broke.

"Arghhhhh!"

Dylan screamed. A cold sweat broke out on his forehead.

Dr. Cheryl couldn't help but say, "This is too much! Britney was the one who stole your diamond ring! Dylan has nothing to do with this! How could you vent your anger and break his leg!"

The middle-aged man raised his head and saw Dr. Cheryl, his eyes brightened.

"Did I go overboard? Of course not!" He looked at Cheryl, "There were more who beat me up just now. My initial idea was to

break all their legs. But now I've changed my mind. Since you begged for mercy, I will spare them if you accompany me to Hilton Hotel."

Cheryl's face turned pale. She glared in anger.

Alex couldn't stay out of it anymore since Dr. Cheryl was involved.

He put his hand in his pocket and said, "Alright, stop it! What happened today,

can you just let it go for my sake?"

Zr0tA

Everyone looked at Alex in confusion. The room was in complete silence.

They felt like they were watching an idiot making a fool out of himself by thinking that Edgar would let things go for his sake! They thought that he would be dead meat.

CHAPTER 26

“Who are you? How are you qualified to ask me to do a favor for you?”

Edgar looked at Alex with a disgruntled look. He flashed an angry smile and said, “Is she yours? Very well, I’ll teach her a lesson in front of you. Are you going to just stand there and watch? Who is your patron? I’m really interested to know

him!”

“Hold him down!” Edgar said to the security guards.

At this moment, Dr. Cheryl’s classmates were entertained to see how Alex dug his own grave.

Dr. Cheryl was unable to fend for herself while being publicly insulted. Even Benjamin was forced to keep quiet.

“You’ll regret this!” Alex said angrily.

“Damn, this guy is still acting tough! I can’t stand the sight of him, he’s obnoxious.

Hurry up and take him down!” said Edgar.

Manager Ramsay answered Edgar’s orders instantly. He didn’t bother to look at Alex’s expression. He was asking for trouble.

Dr. Cheryl was scared to death. She was worried that Alex couldn’t handle so many of them. Furthermore, these people

worked for Thousand Miles Conglomerate,
which was known to be the king of the
underworld in California! No one would
ever dare to mess with them.

Zr0tA

They were brutal and aggressive. Whoever got beaten up by these people would be dead meat. Even Dr. Cheryl's grandfather who was the best doctor in California couldn't save him.

Just then, Alex threw out a black card, "Look. Do you recognize this?"

"A credit card? Are you trying to bribe me with money? How dare you insult me in my territory!" The manager mocked. He glanced at the card and swiped it off

Alex's hand. As the card fell on the ground, Manager Ramsay's smile was gone and his eyes were frozen, "This is..."

He picked the card up hurriedly and examined it carefully.

He held the card in his trembling hands and asked, "From where did you get this Supreme VIP Card of Thousand Miles Conglomerate?"

At that moment, the security guards were about to rush upon Alex to take him down.

Manager Ramsay stopped them,

“Stop! Hold your horses!” The

crowd was shocked.

Benjamin and the rest were extremely surprised. They couldn't believe that this trash had a Supreme VIP Card of Thousand Miles Conglomerate.

It's said that this card was a memento

from Lord Lex Gunther. Whoever

possessed this card should be treated

the same as how they would treat Lord
Lex Gunther.

Zr0tA

They couldn't believe Alex had anything to do with Lord Lex Gunther.

Zr0tA

Edgar panicked. If the card really belonged to Alex, he would be in hot soup for what he had done to Dr. Cheryl a while ago! He couldn't accept it.

Edgar said, "Ramsay, are you certain that this Supreme VIP Card of Thousand Miles Conglomerate is genuine? It's not a fake?"

Manager Ramsay wasn't sure about it.

Alex said, "You can give Lord Lex a call to

confirm this.”

Manager Ramsay dared not call up Lord Lex. Instead, he made a phone call to the main person in charge of Urasawa Restaurant, who was also an executive of Thousand Miles Conglomerate. Since he couldn't confirm the authenticity of this card, the person that he was about to call could confirm it.

Soon, a middle-aged man hurried over. He didn't bother to look at the card. As he saw Alex, his face changed instantly. He

walked up to Alexand and made a full ninety-degree bow. Then, he said respectfully, "Master Alex!"

Everyone was so shocked.

Especially Benjamin. His heart was beating like a wild animal trying to escape his chest.

When he recalled what he had done to Alex throughout the dinner, he suddenly felt that he was lucky enough to still be alive.

He had seen this person in charge of Urasawa Restaurant once. Even his father paid respect to this man. If he had offended this man, his family

Zr0tA

would be in big trouble!

But this man, whom many respected, bowed down to Alex and addressed him as a master!

Zr0tA

"I'm Bernard, the person in charge of Urasawa Restaurant. Your wish is my command," said Bernard.

Bernard was at Hell's Angels that night, so he knew about Alex's identity. Therefore, he addressed Alex as master sincerely.

Alex said, "They suspect that my card is fake. Please confirm its authenticity!"

Bernard looked up and scowled at Manager Ramsay. He gave Ramsay a hard slap.

“How can you not recognize the Supreme
VIP card of Thousand Miles Conglomerate!
You’re not qualified to be the manager of
Urasawa Restaurant! You’re fired, get out
of here!”

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 27

Ramsay's face turned pale and he broke out in a cold sweat.

But he dared not bleat. He nodded and walked away in despair. He left the room.

Bernard then asked, "Master Alex, did anyone here offend you?"

Alex brushed his hair with his fingers and said, "Nothing serious. But this dude here insulted my girlfriend in front of me. I'm not sure how I should deal with him."

Bernard raged, "You piece of shit! You signed your own death warrant. Guards! Throw him into the river and drown him!"

Everyone was frightened.

Edgar felt a shiver run down his spine. He

hurriedly said, "Wait! I am the CEO of Pegasus International, Edgar Shepherd. I'm associated with Lord Lex Gunther of Thousand Miles Conglomerate. You can't do this to me!"

As he finished his words,
Bernard slapped his face.

Slap!

"Do you think that Lord Gunther will bother to help you? Drown him!" said Bernard.

Edgar panicked and he dropped on both knees pleading, "No, please! I was wrong, I apologize! Let me compensate you, Mr. Bernard. Master...Master Alex, please just give me a chance, I'd owe you a big time."

He was really frightened.

The king of the underworld would always suit the action to the words. Once a kill order was given, it would be executed.

Dr. Cheryl couldn't bear to see a murder.

She held Alex's hand. Then she shook her head gently.

Alex nodded, smiled at her, and said, "Forget about it. Exempt him from drowning. My girlfriend can't bear to see this kind of thing. Break one of his legs as a punishment so he will never forget what he did."

Snap!

A security guard broke Edgar's left leg straight away.

Dr. Cheryl covered her face as she couldn't bear to see it.

Alex said, "Alright, it's a wrap! I ate too much, let's go for a walk!"

Bernard handed back the Supreme VIP card and greeted, "Goodbye, Master Alex."

The rest of the security guards bowed and greeted, "Goodbye, Master Alex."

Zr0tA

As Alex and Dr. Cheryl left the restaurant, Benjamin and the rest looked like they had just woken up from a dream. They were drenched in sweat.

While Dr. Cheryl was strolling with Alex, she asked, "Actually, who are you?"

Alex laughed. "Look at you! Are you scared of me because of what just happened?"

"I've heard about the famous Supreme VIP card of Thousand Miles Conglomerate.

Those with this card are as high ranked as Lord Lex Gunther. But he is not a good person. Are you close to him?" Dr. Cheryl asked.

Alex shrugged and said, "I'm not! This card belongs to my father. My father has done business with Thousand Miles Conglomerate. That's how he got this card. But now, he's gone. So, you have nothing to worry about me being associated with him."

Dr. Cheryl patted herself on her

voluptuous breast, "So it is. Now, I'm relieved."

She paused and continued, "Thank you for what you did for me just now. If it weren't for you, I'd be embarrassed."

Alex was flustered by the movement of her voluptuous breast. He blurted, "Is that all?"

Dr. Cheryl was annoyed. "What do you want more from me? Marry you? Don't you dare!"

“Cough, cough, I was just pulling your leg,” Alex said.

Then, they bid farewell at the intersection.

Zr0tA

Alex sat alone on the side of the road and thought to himself, 'Where should I go? Should I stay in a hotel tonight? Or should I go back to the Assex family?'

Deep down in his heart, he didn't want to go back to the Assex family.

Alex thought that maybe Dorothy would be very worried about him since she rang upon him a dozen times and he did not respond for quite some time.

"You believed in the scam but not me! Even
nodded and agreed to him! You fool!" Alex
said to himself.

After a while, he turned his phone back on.

More than thirty text messages from
Dorothy flooded in. All the messages were
to apologize. Before he could finish
reading them, Dorothy called.

Alex hesitated. Then, he
answered the call.

"Honey, where are you?!"

Dorothy was crying.

Alex felt heartbroken when he heard

Dorothy's cry. But he held back and slapped himself. He toughened up and said, "Stop calling me honey. You're Spark's fiancé now.

I'm no longer your husband. I don't deserve to be your husband."

CHAPTER 28

"No, I didn't. I never promised him. You're my husband!" cried Dorothy. Alex said,

"Do you think that I'm blind? I witnessed it!"

Dorothy said, "I... I didn't, I didn't mean to do that. I'm sorry, honey. Where are you? I want to see you. Let me explain and apologize to you. I'm sorry, I shouldn't believe Spark. You can punish me or hit me. Please, let's meet up."

When Alex heard Dorothy pleading so desperately on the phone, his anger subsided.

But he gave it another thought.

'Oh, crap! When Lord Lex put on a show at the Assexes, he addressed me as Master Alex. Does it mean that my identity has been exposed? The Assex family are bloodsuckers, they certainly want me to go back. Then, they will want my help to

re-sign the billion-dollar contract with

ThousandMiles

Conglomerate. D*mn those fools, go to hell!

he thought in his mind.

Then, he asked, "Did you come to apologize because you were told to do so by Madame Joanne?"

Dorothy said immediately, "No, I want to apologize. Honey, have you already forgotten what kind of person I am? I was worried sick when you

didn't answer my call. Tell me where you are now! You can make me do anything when we meet."

Alex sighed and told her his location.

Then, he called Lord Lex.

Zr0tA

“Master! Where are you? I’ve tried to reach you but couldn’t get through! Are you alright?” Lord Lex worriedly asked, “I blame myself for my negligence, I didn’t know that you had to endure all these bullshit in the Assex’s residence.”

Alex said, “It’s alright! Well, the misunderstandings had been resolved. My wife asked me to return. But now that the Assexes are aware of our relationship, they will force me to get back the billion-dollar contract from you. If I’d call you,

you must not agree to it." Lord Lex said, "Should I burn the company down instead?" Alex shook his head. "No need."

Then they discussed the details and hung up.

Twenty minutes later.

Dorothy arrived in a car. "Honey!"

Dorothy shouted.

Dorothy came out of the car. She was in a panic and regret. She hugged Alex tightly and said, "Honey, I was wrong. I shouldn't have doubted you. You can punish me as

you please!”

Slap!

Alex slapped her hard on her back.

Zr0tA

“Ouch!”

Dorothy said with a cry, “Did you just hit me?”

Alex said coldly, “Did you think that I was joking? Who told you not to believe me? What’s worse, you agreed to Spark’s proposal. Were you seriously considering leaving me? Don’t you deserve that hit?”

Dorothy felt bad and said, “I’m sorry honey.

I was wrong. I was confused. I don't know what I was doing.

I was disappointed when I thought that you lied to me, that's why I agreed to Spark's proposal as revenge. I'm sorry, you can hit me a little bit harder, don't feel bad about it!"

Alex was frozen.

All his rage was gone after hearing what she said.

Alex embraced their hug, felt warm, and whispered, "Forget it, you were just caught in the moment. It was Spark, that shameless asshole, that planned this fraud with Madame Joanne."

Then, he hugged her tightly and said, "Dorothy, you seem to have gained weight."

"Have I?"

Dorothy blushed, and she tried to push

away her husband, but eventually, she held
back.

Zr0tA

Soon.

ZrótA

They were back in the Assex's villa.

They didn't expect to come back to a group of people gathering there.

Madame Joanne, Benny Assex, Anderson Assex, Emma Assex, and many more of the Assex family were in the living room, restlessly and anxiously waiting for Alex's return.

They were all present because they

knew that they had offended Lord
Lex of Thousand Miles
Conglomerate. A single word from
Lord Lex could destroy the Assex
family instantly.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 29

However, the opposite could also be said. Anyone who got on the good side of Thousand Miles Conglomerate would flourish.

As Alex appeared, Madame Joanne was the first person to greet him. Contrary to her previous behavior, Madame Joanne was smiling from ear to ear. It was as if she's another person.

She took Alex by his hand and said, "Alex, it was all my fault. I was wrong to judge you so quickly; it was my mistake. This was all caused by Spark and Bill! We were all deceived by their words!"

Standing behind her, Benny Assex, Anderson Assex and other members of the Assex family were all smiling apologetically.

Alex said in a nonchalant voice, "Since it is a misunderstanding, then it's no big deal. I am

going to bed as I'm feeling tired."

Madame Joanne hurriedly said, "Please hold! Just now Lord Lex tore up the billion-dollar contract that was promised to us. What is the relationship between you and Lord Lex? Could you give him a call and ask him to sign the contract again?"

Anderson Assex said, "Yes, it seems that Lord Lex thinks very highly of you. Why don't you explain the situation to him? Forget the billion-dollar contract, if he's

willing to help our Assex family, we could really become a first-rate business family in California!”

Anderson’s words had Madame Joanne’s face lighting up. “Right! I also heard that Lord Lex has several godsons. Our Assex family also has several

granddaughters who are yet to marry. You should mention it to Lord Lex! Maybe the Assex family and the Gunther family can become in-laws!"

Zr0tA

Alex was speechless. The members of the Assex family were truly shameless.

He pretended to smile and replied, "Lord Lex and I barely know each other. He owed my father a favor. When I went to look for him, he promised to return the favor to me."

"What?" Madame Joanne asked. "It was just a favor?"

The Assexes were disappointed after

hearing what Alex had said.

Once the favor had been returned,
they would have nothing left to gain
from Thousand Miles Conglomerate.

Madame Joanne was restless and said,
“Since it is a favor, he should honor his
words! Alex, try to call Lord Lex to explain
that everything was Spark’s fault. Please
ask him to agree to the contract again.”

Alex nodded and made the phone call. He

also deliberately turned on the loudspeaker, so that everyone could hear what was being said. When the call was connected, Alex immediately tried to explain the matter to Lord Lex. After which Alex asked, "Lord Lex, could you please resign the contract?"

Lord Lex answered, "Alex my boy, I went through the trouble of attending Assex Constructions' anniversary banquet. I consider the favor I owed to your father repaid. As for the contract that was ripped to pieces, the Assex family only have

themselves to blame. Do you think they deserve the contract? Those people are willing to sell their daughters for it. Do not bother to contact me again, or I shall eradicate the Assex family.”

This of course was a ploy planned by Alex and Lord Lex.

The faces of all members of the Assex family turned pale when they heard what Lord Lex had said. Madame Joanne signaled to Alex to stop his conversation. If the conversation was allowed to continue, it could spell the doom of the Assex family.

Zr0tA

After Alex hung up the phone, all members of the Assex Family kicked themselves repeatedly in remorse.

“Oh my god!” Madame Joanne gasped.

“Just like that, the billion-dollar contract is gone! Our golden ticket to have a meteoric rise is gone. It is all Spark and Bill’s fault!”

Madame Joanne’s expression was the worst, her face was furiously looking at Alex. She’s nothing more than a two-faced snake. Just a moment ago, she was all

smiles. She pointed at Alex and yelled, "You useless piece of trash! Why didn't you tell us that Lord Lex was returning your father's favor? If you told us earlier, we would have known Spark and Bill were lying! Such a golden opportunity for the Assex family was lost and it's all your fault!"

Lady Emma chimed in, "Yes, he's the one who tore the contract first! He really is a piece of garbage. It was a golden opportunity, but he decided to act all cool and nonchalant about it."

Dorothy said angrily, "That's enough, if it weren't for you all meeting up with Spark and Bill, none of this would have happened. How could you place the blame on my husband? He's the one who's trying to help the family."

Lady Emma sneered, "Aren't you the same? You even agreed to Spark's marriage proposal!"

Dorothy was angry and embarrassed.

The members of the Assex family left one by one, all cussing Alex and their misfortune. Although the billion-dollar contract from Thousand Miles

Zr0uA

Conglomerate had been cancelled, at least Lord Lex would not come after them.

After Madame Joanne had left, Madame Claire immediately pointed at Alex and said, "Are you as dumb as a rock? Lord Lex owes your father a favor and you used it for Assex Constructions? Why didn't you use it for us, for your family?"

Madame Claire was aggrieved. Lord Lex's gifts were almost in their clutches but it's all gone now.

Alex was not feeling angry at all but felt at ease.

Alex thought, 'I'm rich but I won't tell you! I will not give you a single cent!'

Dorothy said, "Mom, don't you bring up this matter again. Alex could have brought us

riches, but we did not appreciate it.”

Madame Claire’s expression turned sour, “If he had kept the nine million dollars gift from Lord Lex, I would not be this mad at him! Why not just marry Spark? At least he is the young director of Rockefeller Group. Unlike this useless piece of trash!”

Dorothy’s face also turned sour. “Mom, don’t you ever mention the name of that disgusting animal ever again, or you will never see me again. He set up such a deceitful scheme for me to step in, yet you

are still thinking about him? Am I really your daughter?"

"Alright, alright!" Madame Claire finally stopped talking about Spark, "I won't mention that person again. About the Love in a Fallen City necklace, was it the real thing?"

Alex shook his head. "It was real."

Madame Claire and her daughters jumped out of their seats as they heard what Alex had said.

CHAPTER 30

Beatrice's eyes immediately widened.

"Did you really buy a necklace that costs thirty million dollars? How much money did you receive from Lord Lex?"

Madame Claire was also curious.

Alex shrugged. "I don't have much money. The necklace was a gift from Lord

Lex. The wedding ring that I got back was free of charge too.”

Madame Claire loudly slapped her own thighs. “Oh my god! How could you hand the thirty million dollars necklace away? Are you an imbecile?”

Alex replied, “It was you who threw it away.”

Madame Claire remembered that she was the one who had thrown the necklace on the ground and deeply regretted it!

Beatrice said, "I remember that the woman who took the necklace was someone you know. She is... Dr. Cheryl, isn't it? Can you please ask for the necklace back?"

Madame Claire's eyes lit up. "Oh yes, we must get it back."

Alex shook his head. He was too embarrassed to ask! He had just pretended to be Dr. Cheryl's boyfriend. He's even more

embarrassed by the incident in

Zr0tA

the elevator. So, he decided to tell a lie, "I went to ask for it, but she thought it was just an imitation made of glass and gave it to a little girl."

"Huh?" Dorothy's jaw hit the floor.

Zr0tA

Madame Claire felt hopeless. "My god, that is thirty million dollars' worth of jewelry. Did you look for the little girl?"

Alex replied, "I went to look for her... But it has been days since she received it. The little girl is only five years old, she tossed it away and it was impossible for us to locate it."

Madame Claire went berserk and almost couldn't contain her urge to kill Alex.

Dorothy also felt a slight pinch in her heart as the necklace was worth thirty million dollars after all. However, she's not as greedy as her mother. Dorothy said, "Since it's lost, there's nothing we can do about it."

Then, she took Alex by his hand and led him upstairs.

Madame Claire was exasperated. "You are not allowed to go to the second floor with him."

Dorothy said, "I'll just have a few words with him."

After entering the room, Alex was slightly taken aback. It was the first time he had ever stepped foot in Dorothy's room since their marriage.

"Alex, don't blame my mother. You know how she is money-centric; I do not want that necklace, I just want you... Forget it, don't speak of it anymore." Dorothy suddenly turned serious, "I'm going on a

business triptomorrow for an exhibition.

I'll be away for three or four days."

Alex frowned. "Can't you send someone

else? You're the boss."

Zr0tA

Dorothy stared at him indignantly. "I'm just the branch manager of a subsidiary company. I must handle almost all business matters on my own. As a man, don't you think you should be helping me out?"

Alex replied, "My dear Dorothy, you can rest assured that I will definitely help you. Even though the billion-dollar deal with Thousand Miles Conglomerate has fallen apart, I'll pull the strings to get you two or even three billion-dollar contracts."

Dorothy frowned a little and gazed at Alex.

“Why do I still feel like you are just spewing empty promises?”

You should be more down to earth and not be blinded by your confidence. The favor of Lord Lex is not given casually,”

Dorothy said.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 31

Alex thought, 'If you knew that I was the boss of Thousand Miles Conglomerate, you wouldn't have said that.'

However, now wasn't the time to reveal that yet.

Dorothy added, "I hope you take some time

to think about what you even want to do in the future. You're a full grown man and yet you're doing nothing with your life! I know what you're going to say, that you need to take care of your mom. But you can always hire a caretaker, can't you? Just get a job, or you can work in my company."

Alex was put in a difficult spot, as he didn't want to leave his mother to caretakers.

However, under Dorothy's glare, he nodded.

"Okay, I'll think about it."

The next morning, Alex gave a ride to Dorothy to the airport in her car.

She met up with a few colleagues there as they were going to attend an exhibition in Block City.

Alex then drove back home.

On the way home, he received a call. It was from Cheryl. "Alex, you need to come to the hospital now. It's about your mother."

Alex gasped, "What happened to mom?"

ZrotA

Cheryl replied seriously, "We'll talk when you arrive."

Alex could feel his chest tightening. He immediately rushed to the hospital as fast as he could.

Alex realized that Brittany's condition was worsening. He didn't need an explanation from Cheryl as the life support monitor showed her vital signs. Plus he had seen many cases of vegetative states in the past. He knew his mother was in the last

hours of her life.

This was the worst possible ending for them, and Alex felt helpless.

She was like an extinguishing candlelight—no one was able to change her fate.

“Mom—” Alex cried aloud, as tears poured down like a storm. He wrapped his arms around Brittany’s body, shaking it vigorously. “Mom, wake up. Don’t go, please don’t go...”

Like a child, he cried and cried until his voice went hoarse.

Cheryl pitied Alex. She placed her hand on his shoulder and said, "Alex, we've done all that we could. But I'm afraid we are still not able to save her. I'm really sorry. She has... an hour at most."

Alex could hear his heart shattering.

He stood up and grabbed Cheryl by the arm, still crying. "Dr. Cheryl, isn't your grandfather the best doctor in California? Can't he save my mom? Please call your grandfather over, please hurry!"

Zr0tA

However, Cheryl shook her head. "My grandpa did come by earlier. But he... couldn't help either."

Zr0tA

“Ahhhh—” Alex howled in anguish, pulling onto his hair and hitting himself on the head repeatedly.

Cheryl immediately stepped in. “Alex, get a hold of yourself.”

Alex turned around and hugged Cheryl tightly. Her shoulder was damp from his tears. Cheryl could empathize with his pain. So, she wrapped her arms around him, comforting him.

Suddenly, Claire walked into the ward.

Seeing Alex and Cheryl hugging each other, Claire could feel her blood boiling.

She rushed over to them and slapped both Alex and Cheryl hard across the face.

She then glared at Cheryl and scolded, "Well isn't this just great? I caught you bastards red-handed this time! I can't believe you would do this in the ward!

Have you no shame? Rockefeller, my
daughter just boarded the plane not long
ago and you're already cheating on her?
Why don't you just kill yourself!!"

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 32

The slap startled Cheryl. It made her cheek burn up.

And the worst part was what Claire had said. Cheryl knew that she was innocent—she was just a doctor, nothing else. Why did she have to endure such treatment?

Claire's loud yelling caught the attention of

numerous nurses and families in the hospital.

Cheryl was pissed off. "Please mind your words, madam. Please do not spout such nonsense."

Claire was an extremely hot-tempered woman, the type to hold a grudge and get revenge.

She swung her hand again, slapping Cheryl across the face. Cheryl couldn't even dodge

it.

Claire yelled, "Bullsh*t! Mind my words? Anyone would know that you're the one who should mind your words! Seducing someone else's husband like the sl*t that you are, and even hugging in public like this!

Why don't you just admit to being a shameless sl*t? I saw everything! There's even saliva on your clothes! You guys just aren't naked yet..."

Everyone was looking at them now,

gossiping softly.

Zr0tA

Cheryl was so triggered she felt like bursting in anger.

Alex was still in a daze just a while ago. But he snapped back to reality and pulled Claire aside.

“Mum, don’t accuse Dr. Cheryl. We didn’t do anything. I... I was just too sad and wanted a hug.”

“Sad and wanted a hug? So you’re saying that you’d get in bed with her if you’re sadder, huh?” Claire said. Suddenly, she noticed that the Love in a Fallen City necklace was hanging around Cheryl’s neck.

Her expression darkened. “And if you say you’re not cheating, what is she wearing around her neck then? You lied to me yesterday. You said you gave it to a five-year-old girl. What is that then? Is she a five-year-old girl? You jerk, you’ve been living off of us and yet you’re here clinging

to another woman. What kind of man are you?"

Alex wasn't in the mood to quarrel. He yelled with reddened eyes, "Can you just stop this please? My mom is dying, she's dying! Can't you see?"

He brought his hands to his face and wiped his tears.

Claire turned to look at Brittany. Lacking sympathy, she huffed, "She's better off

dead. She's no different from being dead now anyway."

"What did you say? I dare you to say that again!"

"Sure, I'll say it again! I said, since your mom is better off dead, she won't be a burden then!"

With a loud smack, Alex slapped Claire hard across her face. Claire was very taken aback by his actions.

She burst into fury, lunging forward to fight Alex. "You bastard! How dare you slap your mother-in-law, you piece of trash! Karma's going to get you for this! You should just die along with your mother! I'll have my daughter

Zr0tA

divorce you as soon as she comes back! I
won't tolerate you and have your
ungrateful ass under my roof. Get out of
our lives!"

Zr0tA

She scratched Alex, forming lacerations on his body.

Alex's blood boiled with anger. He pinned her to the wall and swung his fist towards her direction.

Claire screamed in horror. With a loud thud, she realized that Alex's punch landed on the wall instead.

She pushed Alex away immediately, running for her life.

Alex's knuckles were now bleeding profusely—it was an awfully gory sight. He suddenly felt numb and flopped to the ground with a pained expression.

Blood was seeping into the black ring he was wearing, but no one noticed. A dim light shone through the ring and entered Alex's body in a flash. "Ah!" Alex could feel immense pain in his head.

He screamed out loud as the pain engulfed his consciousness.

"What's wrong with him?"

“Did he faint from crying too much?”

Zr0tA

“Oh what a pity, Alex is such a filial child!”

Everyone chattered in the back. They couldn't bear seeing Alex like this as they all knew what type of person Alex was.

As for Claire, no one believed any of the accusations she had made.

“Alex? Alex!” Cheryl rushed to Alex and knelt down beside him. He wasn't moving at all. She then urged the crowd to give

them some space and carried him onto a bed with the help of a few other nurses.

One of the nurses asked, "Dr. Coney, what happened to him?"

Cheryl replied, "It could be that he couldn't accept his mother's fate. Let's just let him rest here for a while."

Alex was in an unconscious trance. His consciousness seemed to have entered some weird space. A

blurry figure appeared in front of him, and whispered into his ear, "I am Blaine Rockefeller, the God of Medicine, your ancestor."

"What? God of Medicine? Hey, hey, what are you saying? What ancestor?" Alex was in shock.

"You're wearing the black dragon ring, and you have my blood in you. How am I not your ancestor?" The voice said. "The black dragon ring is something we leave to our descendants. With your blood, I hereby gift

you a chance of a lifetime: the Ultimate
Book of Medicine. With the breath of the
gods, you, as my successor, are to deliver
all sentient beings from suffering...”

Zr0tA

“Huh? What skills?”

Zr0tA

Alex was slightly taken back, yet a large amount of information rushed into his mind before he could even react. He could feel a strong gush of energy flowing through his entire body. Alex felt as if he was surrounded by ocean water.

Suddenly, there was a stinging pain in his head. He jerked up from the bed with a scream.

He rubbed the back of his head. He felt as if he just had a strange dream. However, he realized that he really received the Ultimate

Book of Medicine."Holy sh*t, was that all real?" Alex murmured in disbelief.

"Right, what was that black dragon ring the guy mentioned?

"Could it be the ring that dad gave me?"

He immediately looked for his ring and realized that it had shattered into pieces.

CHAPTER 33

Holy sh*t!

Alex explored his mind—it literally felt like a book, the pages flipping on its own as the vast amount of information rearranged and presented themselves: Traditional medicine, witch doctors, voodoo, charms, even medicinal martial arts. Everything

came to him just a blink of an eye,
engulfing his thoughts.

Alex's body relaxed as he felt the warm
energy course through his body.

"Alex, Alex?" Cheryl's voice rang in Alex's
ears, snapping him back into reality.

He blinked. "Huh? Dr. Coney,
where am I? Where's Mom?"
Cheryl replied, "Alex, you just
fainted..."

Just then, a nurse rushed over. "Dr. Coney, the patient Brittany Rockefeller has stopped breathing..."

The lot rushed towards Brittany's ward.

Alex saw his mother lying still in the bed, her face as pale as a sheet and the ECG in a straight line. A doctor approached them, shaking her head.

"Mom! Oh Mom..." Alex cried loudly as he rushed to Brittany's bedside.

Zr0tA

However, a bundle of information flashed through his mind: the vein of the brain was clogged by a blood clot; the stomach and the spleen were weakening; the lungs and heart had temporarily stopped functioning; all four limbs didn't have enough blood flow, hence causing unconsciousness.

She was in a state of suspended animation.

He could still save her with the Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell!

Alex had no idea how he knew any of this information, as if he was some medic expert. He could just identify everything with one look.

'Oh right, the Ultimate Book of Medicine!

'The book I had just received, it was to save others with this knowledge!' Does it really work?'

However, Alex knew that he had to give it a try. "Get

out! All of you!

"I can still save my mom, I have to! Get out!"

Everyone was very taken aback by his sudden change in attitude. "Hey!"

Zr0tA

“Just leave him be, let him send his mother off!” Cheryl spoke up with a stern expression.

This situation reminded her of her own mother—she had left this world as well. Cheryl was still very young then, yet she had to experience the pain of losing her mother first-hand. She would never forget how it shattered her heart.

With Cheryl standing up for him, everyone left the ward.

Alex was glad that it was a single ward as well.

He closed his eyes as he stood next to the bed.

His mind was filled with information from the Ultimate Book of Medicine. The Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell was one of the treatments included in the book, and quite a legendary acupuncture method.

"Mom can be saved!"

“I’ll be able to wake her up immediately too!”

Alex mumbled to himself as he came to a conclusion. It was amazing, simply unbelievable.

Alex was sure that he was right.

However, without silver needles, how could he perform it?

Simple!

All the acupuncture methods in the book didn't require silver needles. Silver needles were at the lowest rank out of all the needles he could use. Most of the methods required Chi or electricity, or he could transform his Chi into a flow of electricity.

With the Chi from his ancestor, he would be able to achieve this. With a small thud, Alex poked his index finger onto Brittany's temple.

He could feel his Chi flowing out of his finger, slowly forming into small flows of electricity.

'It is true, this is all true. Mom can be saved,' Alex thought. He was extremely excited as he carefully moved to the next acupuncture point.

The middle of the top of her skull.

Then, under her belly button.

Cheryl was still standing in front of the ward, worried about Alex. She looked into the window of the ward, checking up on him without thinking. However, she was shocked by what she saw.

She rushed into the ward, "Alex, what are you doing? Stop!" Alex yelled, "Don't come near me, I'm saving my mom!"

He was now speeding up his pace as
he poked into a few other vital
acupuncture points on Brittany.

Zr0tA

Cheryl was speechless.

'If he really could save his mother, he would be a god,' she thought. Cheryl took a deep sigh.

'Fine, I'll let him do his thing!'

Cheryl decided to stand aside and watch him. Alex was now pressing hard in the middle of Brittany's chest.

With that, the Thirteen

Acupuncture of Hell was completed. He just had to wait till she woke up.

"Mom, you have to wake up, you have to!"

Alex closed his eyes and prayed. Just as he said that, a light beep echoed through the ward.

Cheryl was startled and looked towards the monitor that was monitoring

Brittany's heart rate. The ECG was just a straight line just a while ago, and yet her heart was now beating again.

"How... how could this be?"

CHAPTER 34

Cheryl stared in disbelief.

She approached Brittany's bedside and noticed her eyelids fluttering, slowly opening up.

Cheryl thought that she was hallucinating.

After snapping back to reality, she exclaimed excitedly, "Alex, Alex! Your mother woke up! She woke up!"

Alex opened his eyes immediately, overjoyed.

"Mom! Mom! You woke up!" Alex exclaimed, holding Brittany's hand. His eyes turned red as he started to tear up.

It was real, the book was real.

Even his

ancestor was

real.

This was all thanks to his ancestor.

Cheryl was extremely excited and she started tearing up as well. She couldn't believe that Brittany actually woke up.

They had announced her death not long ago, yet she just woke up suddenly.

This was really a miracle in the medical field!

Zr0tA

“Could it be that he really was trying to save her?” Cheryl murmured under her breath, staring at Alex with puzzled eyes.

Brittany actually woke up and turned to Alex. “Alex, where am I?”

Cheryl ran out of the ward to call her colleagues to form a medical team to give Brittany a full body check up.

Everything was fine with her now.

News quickly spread throughout the hospital, causing an uproar. One of their doctors had just announced Brittany's time of death. However, in just a few minutes, someone saved her and she woke up from her coma.

Cheryl finally got the chance to ask Alex, "You were poking your mom in random spots a while ago, with nothing in hand to refer to. What was that? Were you really saving her?"

Alex smiled. "What do you mean poking randomly? That was the Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell."

"What Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell?"

"Ah... well, I learned that online, it seemed to work on patients in vegetative states. I was panicking then, so I decided to try it out. But I didn't think it would work!" Alex laughed nervously as he lied. He knew he shouldn't

reveal anything about the Ultimate Book
of Medicine.

Frankly, he was very much confused as well.

Zr0tA

Cheryl was speechless. How could he believe everything online? Half an hour later, Alex and his mother were alone in the ward.

Brittany stared at Alex and asked, "Son, where's your father?" Alex's expression turned grim. "Dad, he... passed away."

Upon hearing that, Brittany hugged her son tightly and cried hysterically.

After calming down, Brittany whispered to Alex, "Son, you have to be careful of

your third uncle.”

Alex was taken aback.

Brittany continued, “I suspect that it was your third uncle who caused the incident that happened to your father and I. I did some digging on the night before your wedding and found out that your third uncle betrayed our company—he reaped benefits by selling information.”

Alex could feel his blood boiling upon

hearing this.

Alex's father, William Rockefeller, was the head of the family. He had two younger brothers, Noah Rockefeller and John Rockefeller. He had a younger sister as well, Paige Rockefeller.

William had decided to take a chance and start a business with someone at the age of thirteen.

Twenty years later, he had single-handedly started Rockefeller Group.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 35

Ten years later, Rockefeller Group had a capital of 300 billion, becoming a famous business in California.

It was a fact that the Rockefellers's achievements were because of William and Brittany's hard work. However...

The Rockefellers ended up kicking the both

of them out of the family and John took over their business. Spark even wanted to have Alex's wife.

If this were really John's scheme, it would be terrifying.

Alex clenched his fists tightly. "Don't worry, Mom. If Dad really died in vain because of Uncle's scheme, I'll make sure he pays for it with the worst punishments possible."

Alex decided to stay for the night in the hospital to accompany his mom instead of going back to the Assex's residence. He knew that if he had gone home, he would end up in a terrible fate.

Brittany had just woken up from her coma so her body was still fairly weak. She fell asleep in just a few moments.

Alex, on the other hand, couldn't calm down at all.

The ring that his father had left him was

truly incredible.

ZrótA

'Did Dad know about this?' Alex thought to himself as he sat next to the bed. He could still feel a strong flow of energy coursing through his entire body.

Zr0tA

'Was this the Chi that my ancestor had given me?' Oh right, training!

Alex immediately revised the moves in his head. They were from an unknown type of martial arts—the Force—mainly used as medicinal martial arts. He had wanted to try it out, though he wasn't really hoping to get anything out of it. This was all still too surreal for him to process.

However, as he started training, it was as if he was a natural at these moves. The training of the Force felt quite simple to

him. He was able to gain control over the energy coursing through his veins, flowing to every part of his body. His training was extremely successful—he was able to gain full control over his core and his Chi was stronger than before. He had mastered this unknown martial art.

At the same time, Cheryl had reached home as well.

She took off her shoes and jacket before flopping her beautiful figure onto the sofa. She exclaimed, "I'm spent!"

Her grandmother handed her a bowl of soup. "Here, Cherry. Grandmamade some goulash in the evening. Have some, it'll enhance your beauty."

Cheryl rolled over and realized that there were two huge meatballs laying in a bowl. She picked it up and drank the whole bowl of soup in one go. Her grandmother smiled as she watched her drink the soup.

Just then, her grandfather, James Coney, walked into the living room. He furrowed

his eyebrows, "You should sit properly,
young lady! No wonder you still can't get
yourself a boyfriend!"

Zr0tA

Grandma snapped back. "Oh, shut it you old fart. What are you about? My dear little granddaughter is tired. So what if she's putting a leg up? It's not like she's putting it on top of your head! Cherry, just ignore him and sit however you like."

James decided not to argue any further. He then poured himself a cup of tea and asked, "Was it busy at the hospital?"

Cheryl replied, "Not really, but there was a vegetative patient who just woke up all of a

sudden today...”

She smiled as she imitated Alex’s poking and explained what he did. She recounted to her grandfather about the Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell and how Brittany was revived.

But James froze and asked immediately, “The Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell? Can you tell Grandpa more about that? How did he do it? What acupuncture points did he poke at?”

Cheryl blinked her beautiful eyes in confusion, "Grandpa, do you really believe in that kind of stuff? I haven't heard of anything called the Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell."

However, she still listed out the acupuncture points he had poked.

James's expression turned serious as he listened to her. In the end, he slapped his thigh and exclaimed, "The Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell, it really is the Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell! It's the

legendary

reviving method! Cherry, quick, contact the
guy. Grandpa would like to meet this young
man."

Zr0tA

“Huh...?” Cheryl’s mouth was wide open as she stared at her grandfather in disbelief.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 36

The next morning, Alex found himself waking up at his mother's bedside.

He realized that he had trained the whole night away. So, he felt sticky and uncomfortable.

He looked down at himself and what met his eyes shocked him.

His body was covered in sticky black oil. It smelt disgusting and strong.

He knew that he had used his ancestor's Chi to train for the Force. This helped him cleanse his entire body. Although he was uncomfortable from the sticky goop, he felt extremely energized despite training for the whole night. His body and mind were both refreshed and his core coursed with Chi.

He turned to Brittany, she was still fast

asleep. But her condition seemed better now.

This made him believe that it was not a dream.

He immediately rushed to the bathroom in the ward and took a shower.

However, his clothes were dirty as well, and they smelt disgusting.

“Well, I guess I have to go back to the Assex’s residence!”

After Brittany woke up, Alex talked to her for a brief while and headed towards the Assexes's place.

Zr0tA

However, he saw that his luggage had been thrown out of the Assexes's mansion yet again. Claire was even cutting up his clothes into pieces.

Zr0tA

Alex could feel his anger exploding like a volcano in his head.

He rushed over and snatched the scissors right out of her hands, "What's your problem? Why are you cutting up my clothes?"

Claire was merciless. "This is my house, so what if I'm cutting them up? You're not part of our family from now on. We don't take pests in any way! Also, sign these divorce papers."

Claire then took a small stack of divorce papers out from the mansion. Alex asked helplessly, "Where did you get these?"

Claire replied, "Dorothy wrote them. She prepared them from quite a while back."

Alex didn't want to believe a word she said. He huffed, "Oh don't you worry, I'll definitely move out. However, I won't be signing these, I want Dorothy to confront me herself!"

After that, he picked up a few personal documents and left his other stuff lying on the ground. He didn't need them anymore.

"Where are the keys? Give them back. You could live under a bridge for all I care!"

Alex threw the keys at her and smiled. "It doesn't concern you as to where I'm living. Be it under a bridge or in a 5-star hotel!"

Claire scoffed, "Hmph, a 5-star hotel? I bet you can't even afford living in a dog shelter! Get out of my house! I'll find a better husband for Dorothy, someone who is much, much better than you, you useless piece of sh*t!

Even Spark is way better than you!"

Alex was extremely triggered by the name 'Spark'. He kicked the well at the side out of anger.

With a loud crash, the well was smashed into pieces.

Claire's eyes widened in shock. She couldn't say a word and stared at Alex with a terrified expression.

She waited until he had walked away from the mansion before she dared to continue yelling at him then.

After leaving the Assex mansion, Alex received a phone call from Cheryl.

He picked the call up immediately, "Hello? Dr.

Coney, did something happen to Mom?"

Cheryl smiled. "Nope, your mother is fine. She's doing pretty well actually. I'm calling you because my grandfather wants to see you."

"Huh? Your grandfather? The legendary doctor of California, James Coney?"

Medical experts were usually well known in the area. A legend was just a mere title.

James Coney, however, was truly
a legendary doctor in California.

Everyone knew just how
knowledgeable he was.

Zr0tA

Alex was confused and asked, "Dr. Coney, what business does your grandfather have with me?"

Cheryl didn't tell him straightforwardly, she only said, "You'll know when you see him. Go visit your mother first, I'll pick you up at the hospital."

CHAPTER 37

"Mom!" Alex came to the hospital and visited his mom again. She was awake at the time. His anger towards the Assexes dissolved as soon as he saw her.

Examining Brittany with his knowledge of the Ultimate Book of Medicine, he noticed that she was doing a lot better than the day before. Relieved, Alex smiled widely and said, "I bought this porridge from a

stall nearby.

The doctor said that you could only eat soft foods as of now. I'll feed you, alright?"

Brittany stared at him lovingly, "Alex, I heard that you came to take care of me every day, you're even more professional than the nurses now. I'm sorry that I've been such a burden on you."

Alex could feel his chest tightening.

His mother was the absolute sweetest. His mother-in-law, Claire, however, only treated him as a slave.

He fed the porridge slowly to Brittany,
then gave all four of her limbs a
massage.

Brittany had been in a coma for more than
six months, so her muscles had been slowly
wasting away.

However, Alex's massaging method was
special: it had the help of the flow of Chi
from the force as well.

He knew that his mother would be able to heal and walk normally in just three days' time.

"Hello, Dr. Coney!" Brittany suddenly exclaimed.

Alex turned around and realized that Cheryl had really come to the ward.

She looked puzzled and asked, "Your massage technique has quite a unique style. Did you get that online as well?"

"Uhm..."

Yeah."

"Continue on then."

From Cheryl's point of view, Alex was just wasting his time and energy. He wasn't putting the right amount of strength into massaging, nor was he massaging the right pressure points. She thought that he was just clueless.

However, what she didn't know was that Alex had used his Chi to unclog Brittany's veins and arteries. Due to the use of Chi, he shouldn't massage her limbs too roughly, or he would damage her veins.

Cheryl shook her head and thought to herself, 'Grandpa wanted to see him to ask about that Thirteen Acupuncture of Hell thing. I guess he'll just end up disappointed; he doesn't know anything about the medical field at all.'

After massaging, Brittany thanked her son. "Alex, I feel so much better after that massage, I think I'll be able to walk soon."

Alex nodded and smiled, "Don't worry, you'll even be able to run in threedays' time."

Cheryl had almost laughed out loud, yet she decided to hold back and not expose him.

At the hospital entrance, Cheryl took out

her keys and pressed a button. The headlights of a red BMW X5 lit up.

Zr0tA

“Get in.”

ZrótA

“Where are we going?” Alex got into the car and asked curiously. He hadn’t figured out why James wanted to see him.

“Ganoderma.”

Alex knew that Ganoderma was the clinic that James had opened in California.

Apart from James, a group of old doctors was working there as well. A lot of the sick would go to this clinic instead of hospitals.

They even attracted customers from other cities due to their popularity.

The two arrived at Ganoderma in just a few moments. Alex followed Cheryl from the back and couldn't help but stare.

Cheryl was fairly tall, around 170 cm. She had curves in all the right places, especially her behind. Her body was very alluring as his eyes fixated on her.

Suddenly, Cheryl stopped in her tracks and turned around. "What do you think?"

'Huh?'

Alex wasn't paying attention to anything she had said. He had been staring at her back the whole time. Without putting much thought into it, he blurted out, "Very fertile."

Cheryl froze and she realized that the guy was still staring at her back.

She knew that she was quite 'gifted' in

some areas of her body. Her grandmother mentioned just as much too. However, receiving such a comment from a guy was something that she couldn't tolerate at all.

Zr0tA

“You... shameless!”

She then took a few steps forward and turned around once more, “You walkin the front.”

Alex wanted to smack himself there and then. He knew that it was wrong for him to say that she was ‘very fertile’.

‘Why couldn’t you have said something else? What does it have to do with you that she’s fertile or not?’ He thought to himself.

With Cheryl's guidance, they soon reached a clinic.

Suddenly, Alex noticed that Claire was waiting outside as well.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 38

Claire was queuing up outside of the clinic with the other patients. She was at the very end of the line, currently talking to the woman next to her...

"The legendary Dr. Coney is really something. I had to ask quite a few friends to help me get an appointment with him which I had to

wait for another three months to happen.”

“Yeah, I had to wait for more than three months too. Well I can’t complain, no doctor is better than him!”

As she conversed, Claire felt someone approaching her and turned around.

She frowned when she realized it was Alex. “Why are you here?”

Alex greeted her out of habit, “Mum.”

Claire exploded with anger, "What do you mean Mum? Who's your Mum? Let me tell you something, you useless piece of sh*t. My daughter will soon divorce you and we're cutting clean! Stop trying to crawl back to us! Heck, were you stalking me? You probably couldn't find a place to stay, right? Are you going to beg me to take you back?"

Alex shook his head and said, "Ma'am, don't you worry, I have a place to stay. You're in my way, so will you please excuse me, ma'am?"

“What did you call me?” Claire was triggered.

ZrotA

Mum and Ma'am sounded slightly similar, but the meaning was one heck of a difference.

Zr0tA

Claire was 46 years old at the time. But she had done her best to preserve her beauty and kept up with all the fashion trends just to look like she was in her early 30s. Thus, being called 'Ma'am' triggered her tremendously.

Frustration welled up in her chest.

Suddenly, she noticed Chery walking behind Alex. Slightly startled, her expression changed as she said out loud, "Oh I see how it is! I was wondering why

this trash could agree to get out of my house without hesitation! So you're living with this b*tch now, huh? And you were saying that you had nothing to do with her.

As if!

"Look at this woman. She's such a plain Jane, unlike our darling Dorothy. Look at her clothes, they look so cheap! Alex, I really have to say, your taste in women is as low as your life. What you have is just another b*tch!"

"Have some respect, please." Cheryl's

expression was stern.

“Tsk, you’re the one who ruined my daughter’s family. You’re just a homewrecker, why should I respect you?”

As she spoke, a hard slap hit Claire’s fair face. It turned out that the one who slapped her was the woman she was cheerily talking to just awhile ago.

Claire was stunned. She held her face with her palm and asked, “Why did you

slap me?"

The woman was furious, "Why? You just called the legendary doctor's granddaughter a b*tch! Dr. Coney shouldn't even give you a check up, you hot-tempered wench! Who are you to yell at them anyway? Just look at you,

your daughter probably isn't any better as well. This young man is right to get a divorce!"

Zr0tA

The woman had seen Cheryl before, hence she knew her identity. She knew that she had to stand up for Cheryl.

“What? She... she’s the legendary doctor’s granddaughter?” Claire’s eyes widened in disbelief.

Cheryl brought Alex into the clinic, James had just finished checking up on a patient.

Cheryl smiled, “Grandpa, this is Alex.”

James looked up and stood with a smile. "I apologize, everyone. I have a guest to attend to so please excuse us! Harold, please get everyone's details while I'm gone. I'll be back in a bit."

A sharp patient immediately said, "Dr. Coney, is this guy your grandson-in-law? No worries, doctor. Please go ahead! Your grandson-in-law is paying you a visit after all, that must be important to you. We don't mind waiting!"

Someone chimed in, "Yeah, yeah! We don't mind coming back another daytoo."

Claire stood by the door and looked extremely upset upon hearing those words.

The legendary doctor, James Coney, was well known in California. His status was much higher than the Assexes's; everyone knew who he was. Even the politicians in California treated him with the utmost respect. Hewas a VIP in the whole country.

If Alex were to become his grandson-in-law, that would elevate his status greatly as well.

Zr0tA

How could she ever accept that?

Alex, James, and Coney then walked past her
and entered another room in the back.

Zr0tA

Alex didn't even glance in her direction, as if she was merely thin air.

Alex had no idea as to why James was looking for him. He even noticed that James was a little too modest towards him.

Was he really trying to get him to be his grandson-in-law?

Just then, Cheryl decided to speak up

and explain that her grandfather wanted to know if the Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell was real. She continued, "Grandpa, Alex has absolutely no knowledge or experience in the medical field. He said so himself, that was just something he found online. You don't have to stress about this acupuncture thing this much. This was most likely something fictional; something from a novel or TV show!"

She then turned to Alex. "Alex, just look up

the site and show it to Grandpa so we can get this over with.”

In her point of view, Brittany’s miracle wasn’t because of Alex, it was because Brittany had a strong will to live and was able to wake herself up.

James replied, “Cherry, the Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell isn’t fictional, it’s absolutely real. Our ancestors used to use this acupuncture method, but some of it got lost as it was handed down over generations. As of now, I only have nine of

the acupuncture points. The other four are missing. This mystical acupuncture method would only work best with all points. The effect wouldn't be as great if it's incomplete, let alone four! That's why I've never taught you this."

James then turned to Alex. "Young man, I'm just very curious. That's why I asked to see you today."

Alex took a glance at Cheryl and nodded at James. "Yes, I did use the Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell. It's the real deal. I'm sorry that I lied to you yesterday, Dr. Coney."

Zr0tA

Cheryl spoke up, "There's no way. I mean, where did you even learn that acupuncture method? You didn't even attend medical school! Or did you manually learn traditional medicine? All you did was read a few books. What, did it just pop out of nowhere?"

Alex thought to himself, 'Well you're right about that, it did pop out of nowhere.'

Just then, hurried heavy footsteps

could be heard from the outside.

Someone shouted, "Dr. Coney, Dr.

Coney! Help! Please help my

daughter!"

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 39

“Huh, what happened?”

“A little girl! Her face is pale and bluish! She’s not breathing!” “This is terrifying... would Dr. Coney be able to save her?”

The crowd started discussing among themselves, hoping for the best.

Just then, a middle-aged man carried a five-year-old-girl into the room. Hewas crying hysterically, with panic written all over his face. With a loud thud, he knelt down.

Cheryl immediately got into action. She briefly checked the little girl's vitals.

As she checked, her expression darkened. The little girl wasn't breathing andhad no pulse.

Cheryl immediately started doing CPR, asking the middle-aged man as to what had happened.

The man cried, "I don't know, I... I was just paying at the counter. Then, my little girl just fainted behind me. She just fell unconscious."

James approached the little girl as well, he said, "Examine her throat."

Cheryl did as she was told, yet she didn't find anything blocking the airway.

Zr0tA

James smacked the little girl's back a few times as well. However, nothing came out. In the end, all James could do was sigh and shook his head in grief.

The man was still on his knees and cried even more hysterically.

With a puzzled look, Alex watched by the side. He could see a faint figure that looked exactly like the little girl, standing next to him. She was staring at the man, calling him papa

repeatedly.

“Is this her soul?”

“Well damn, I can see spirits too now,” Alex muttered under his breath.

As the saying goes, it is impossible to revive the deceased. However, in the *Ultimate Book of Medicine*, there's still hope for someone who had just passed.

He tapped on Cheryl's

shoulder, "Can I have a go?"

She didn't even look at him,

"Stop messing around."

Alex then dragged her harshly to

the side, "You're not helping." Cheryl

stumbled aside, annoyed by his

actions.

Alex then grabbed the little girl's soul and

forced it back into her body...

Ghost doctor skills were included in the Ultimate Book of Medicine, including methods to cure the spirit. Thus, it wasn't too surprising that Alex was able to see spirits.

Zr0tA

The method he was using had a title as well. It was called Soul Shifting. "Mr. Coney, come over here." Alex said.

"Huh?" James immediately approached, he thought that Alex needed help.

However, Alex continued, "Didn't you learn the Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell? I'll be using that to save her now. Just watch and learn."

He then started using his Chi and pressed down on the first acupuncture point.

With the training of the Force, his Chi now had the element of electricity. Cheryl placed a hand to her chest, trying to calm down from anger.

'Is he really talking to Grandpa in such a tone? That's just being too arrogant now, isn't it? Does he really think he's some sort of legendary doctor?'

She was more annoyed by the fact that she had witnessed him poke his mother in random spots, as if he were just a child messing around. This was all too ridiculous

to her.

“Do we not need silver needles?”

James was surprised. This was unbelievable to him as well.

He was starting to doubt the young man, thinking that Alex might have a screw loose. He got too excited back then upon hearing the acupuncture method.

“Nope, silver needles are of the lowest rank, I’m using my Chi.” Alex said as he continued poking.

“Alex, stop it, you’re not a doctor. It was pure luck that your mother woke up. You’re just wasting time here. She might be saved if you let me handle this.” Cheryl said loudly.

The kneeling man was shocked.

“He... He’s not a doctor?” Cheryl replied, “No.”

The man was now triggered, he yelled,
“You f*cker! Stop touching my daughter if
you’re not a doctor! Are you insane? F*ck
off!” He then landed a kick on Alex’s waist.

“Don’t touch me, or your daughter will
really die. I still have one acupuncture
point left.” Alex stayed in position and
poked in the middle of the little girl’s chest.

“Argh... I’ll kill you!” The man screamed and
swung his arm, about to slap Alex.

However, his attack was blocked. Alex

stared at him and said calmly, "Look at your daughter, she has woken up."

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 40

“Huh?”

Everyone stared at the little girl.

Her eyelashes fluttered gently as she slowly opened her eyes. She actually woke up.

Cheryl's eyes widened, she couldn't believe

what she was seeing.

However, after waking up, the little girl felt extremely uncomfortable. She placed both of her hands on her neck area as if she was suffocating.

“There’s something in her throat. It’s still stuck!” James said panickedly.

“Let me handle this!” Alex said and pressed his hand against the little girl’s chest. He lightly poked on her chest again,

as if he were playing a lute.

Cheryl recognized this method. Alex had massaged his mother's limbs the same.

With a loud thud, Alex pressed down hard on the little girl's chest. An object flew out of her mouth as she spat it out.

It was a kumquat.

Zr0tA

The man suddenly remembered something and exclaimed. "It's the mountain hawthorn. I bought some for Zoey a while ago. I thought she had finished it earlier. I didn't think it..."

Alex said, "It was stuck too deep in her throat so it couldn't be slapped out. No matter, everything's fine now."

As expected, the little girl was able to breathe normally again. Her cheeks were slightly flushed as well. She turned to the man. "Papa!"

The man hugged his daughter tightly. He thought that he had lost her. He sobbed uncontrollably as mixed emotions welled up in his heart.

Alex turned to James. "Did you catch that, old man?"

James seemed exceptionally excited. His eyes lit up. "It... It really is the Thirteen Acupuncture of Hell!

God, I didn't think I'd be able to witness it firsthand in this lifetime! I can die in peace now! But... I'm old, my eyes aren't all that

well. You were doing it a little too fast, so
I...”

Alex smiled, noticing that there were a pen
and a few pieces of paper lying on the
office desk.

He walked over and immediately
wrote on a random piece of paper. In
just two minutes, he was done writing.

Alex handed James the piece of paper and
said, “Here you go.”

James retrieved it and examined it. His lower lip trembled in shock. "This... This is the full version of the Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell? You... You're just going to give it to me?"

Every doctor would only hope to get their hands on such a mystical acupuncture method—it was priceless!

How could this man just give it out like that? Was he a spendthrift?

Alex didn't mind at all. The Thirteen Acupuncture of Hell was just an insignificant method within the larger Ultimate Book of Medicine. All of this information came to him for free as well, hence he didn't think to keep all of this to himself.

He said, "Old man, you're the legendary doctor of California. You've saved countless lives. If I gave this acupuncture method to you, more people could be saved. So, why shouldn't I give it to you?"

You can

teach it to Dr. Cheryl Coney too.”

James was old. But, he dropped to his knees and thanked Alex. “I, James Coney, am forever grateful to you for entrusting me with this knowledge. I have nothing much to offer, but I thank you on the behalf of everyone else who is in need as well. Thank you, young man, for your generosity.”

“Oh please, don’t kneel for me, old man. Get up, please, you really don’t have to thank me.” Alex said as he helped James

up.

The little girl's father was incredibly thankful towards Alex as well.

He felt especially regretful that he had just kicked Alex in the waist. He felt so embarrassed.

“Young doctor, I’m so sorry for my behavior just a while ago. You saved my daughter; you revived her; you basically saved my whole family! I should be damned for life, to think that I wanted to beat you up! Oh, I haven’t even introduced myself. I’m Charles Carter, from Waylon Realty...”

Before he could finish his sentence, Alex interrupted. "Please, don't blame yourself. I understand how you felt. Your daughter just woke up, so you have to take better care of her now! Sir, Dr. Coney, if you will please excuse me, I have to go visit my mom in the hospital now."

He turned around and left the clinic so quickly James couldn't even catch up to him.

Charles froze. "Oh no, I forgot to ask for the young doctor's name. I have to repay him

for saving my daughter somehow! Dr.

Coney, you know him, right?"

James looked towards Cheryl.

Cheryl replied, "He's the son of the founder of Rockefeller Group. His name is Alex Rockefeller."

Charles was stunned. "Huh? That was him?"

James immediately chimed in as well.

“Cherry, you should catch up to him! We can’t just receive from him like this, we have to repay him too!”

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 41

Alex had just left Ganoderma, walking at a slow pace.

He thought, 'Mom will be discharged in two days, but we lost our property. Plus, I was kicked out by Claire, so we won't have a place to stay. Buying a property is my priority now.'

But he also knew that his father had

hidden Thousand Miles Conglomerate's existence from his mother. He had heard this from Lex himself.

'Should I tell her?' He thought.

He wouldn't be able to use any of his funds if he didn't give her a proper explanation.

He decided to keep it a secret for now.

Thousand Miles Conglomerate was

involved with underworld work, so most people would view them as mafias or thugs. This could be the reason his father had hidden the conglomerate from his mother.

It wouldn't be wise to reveal the truth to her right now.

'Then... I'll just get a small apartment. I'll tell her the money came from my savings.'

It was decided.

Just as Alex was about to call a cab to go back to the hospital, Cheryl yelled out to him from behind, "Alex, Alex! Why are you in such a rush? God!"

Zr0tA

Cheryl was jogging over to him.

Alex turned around and he could feel his eyes widen.

As she jogged, Cheryl's chest was bouncing everywhere, as if it was about to bounce out. It was quite the sight.

"Ahem. Hey, Dr. Coney. Why did you come after me? Did something else happen? Is the little girl alright?"

“No, she’s fine. Grandpa just wanted me to treat you to a meal.” “Your grandpa? What about you?”

“Take a guess.”

Alex smiled. Cheryl was exceptionally beautiful at this moment—drop-dead gorgeous. Alex couldn’t help but be reminded of the intimate moment they had in the elevator a few days ago.

Cheryl felt slightly embarrassed by his

stare. Her cheeks flushed as she pointed towards her left. "I know a restaurant over there. It serves some pretty good stuff. Why don't we eat there?"

Alex replied, "I don't mind."

Cheryl exclaimed. "Let's go, then! It's just behind this alleyway."

The two then walked into the alleyway.

Just then, a group of five blocked their way.

They were armed with bats like they were thugs.

Cheryl grabbed Alex's hand in panic. She whispered, "Are they here for us?" Alex's heart dropped as well.

He did inherit his ancestor's medical martial arts skills and learned the Force as well. According to his ancestor, he would be quite the fighter now. However, he had

never used any of this in an actual fight so he wasn't quite sure if it would work.

He took Cheryl's hand and turned around, preparing to make a run for it.

However, another four men showed up behind him. They were in the same clothes, holding the same bats.

It was blatantly obvious that these men were here to get them. "What do we do now? Oh god," Cheryl said as she trembled in fear.

Chi was coursing through his entire body, flowing through his muscles and bones.

That thunder-like feeling filled him with limitless energy. He stood in front of Cheryl. "Don't be scared, I'll protect you."

"You can't even protect yourself. Dream on!" The guy laughed as he eyed Cheryl up and down. The teen leader had a scar on his face. His face was

twisted horrifically.

Zr0tA

Seeing her beautiful features and curvy body, he couldn't help but want to make advances on her.

"I didn't expect such a beauty to be my reward. This woman is mine!" "Bro, don't just keep her to yourself! Sharing is caring!"

"Hah! After I'm done with her, I'll hand her to you guys!"

The color drained from Cheryl's face as she felt increasingly frustrated and panicky.

Alex's gaze was cold. "What do you want?"

Scarface laughed. "We want to screw you up! You're pretty expensive, you little brat. Someone gave us a total of two million to have both your legs broken. They want you to slap yourself a hundred times too. Come on, if you know what's best for you, get on your knees and slap away! Give us a good show, won't you? If you give us no choice but to do it ourselves, it wouldn't just cost you your legs."

“Mark, get your phone out and start recording!”

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 42

Alex's expression turned colder. "Who sent you?"

Scarface scoffed. "Do you really want to know? Kneel down and slap yourself then. If you give me a good show, I might consider telling you."

Alex nodded. "How about this? You kneel down and slap yourself a hundred times. Then, I might consider letting you off easy."

"What?" The thugs were confused as they thought they had heard wrong.

Before arriving, they heard that this guy was a good for nothing bloke. He wasn't even allowed to be intimate with his own wife and he had to slave away for his mother-in-law.

How could someone as worthless as him dare to say such words to them? Was he out of his mind?

“You’ve got some guts, I’d give you that you brat. Looks like you’re going to have to say goodbye to your lower half and your arms!” Scarface smirked cockily, raising the bat above his head, about to smash Alex’s legs.

There was a loud thud followed by cracking.

The wooden bat smashed right into Alex's shin and into two halves from the impact.

Zr0tA

“Ah! Stop!” Cheryl
screamed out of terror.

However, something
felt odd.

The thick bat was broken in half, yet Alex
seemed oddly calm. He stood there,
expressionless and not moving a muscle.
It was as if he couldn't feel pain at all.

Scarface was stunned as well.

He had broken numerous legs, yet none of
them could endure the impact of the bat,

let alone an impact strong enough to break the bat in half.

Alex stood there, shifting his weight to his other leg.

He was overjoyed. The force his ancestor had given him did him well.

He wasn't talking about the attack power of this skill, but the incredible defense that it provided. It was as if an invisible shield protected him from any attack.

As he was being attacked on the shin, a large flow of Chi rushed to it. As if it mirrored the attack, it would protect that certain body part immediately without causing him any pain at all.

“You’re unhurt?” Scarface was absolutely shocked.

“Yeah, but you’re not going to be,” Alex said as he swung his leg towards Scarface’s shin, he attacked the same spot where Scarface

had attacked him.

Zr0tA

With a loud crack, Scarface's shin was fractured. A loud smack followed as Scarface's face was slapped and he fell to the ground.

"F*ck, let's gang up on him!" The remaining thugs yelled, lunging towards Alex.

Alex was confident in himself. His eyes and mind were sharp, focusing on both protecting Cheryl and taking down the enemy. He snatched one of their bats and started swinging vigorously at them. His

strength was immense, it was as if he was on a killing spree. The remaining hitmen yelped in pain, no longer able to fight back.

Cheryl initially thought that she was done for earlier.

What she did not expect was Alex's strength. Her eyes were filled with admiration.

When some of the thugs tried to harass her

with their bats, he put himself between them as he fought to protect her. This left an extremely strong impression on her.

“Hey!” Alex poked Scarface on his fractured leg with a bat. “Who sent you to break my legs?”

Scarface refused to spill at first.

However, Alex put more pressure onto his fractured shin, invoking an intense pain.

He wasn't able to handle it anymore and

pleaded, "Please stop! Stop! I'll confess, I'll tell you! It was Spark Rockefeller from Rockefeller Group!"

Zr0tA

Alex felt extremely angry when he heard that name.

'You motherf*cker. I'm not even seeking revenge yet, and here you are trying to get at me?

Zr0tA

'Well then, so be it. I'll give you a life lesson too.'

"Call Spark now, tell him that you've captured me, and a beauty!"

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 43

During the Assexes' annual celebration, Spark was incredibly shocked that Lord Lex Gunther from Thousand Miles Conglomerate had stood up for Alex. He couldn't understand why Lord Lex would ever help a useless piece of shit like Alex.

If Lex ever wanted to beat up his grandfather, Bill Rockefeller, all Spark would be able to do was watch. He

wouldn't ever dare to show any signs of vengeance.

That would mean that he wouldn't be able to seek revenge on Alex for breaking his arm.

Besides, Rockefeller Group was still worried about Thousand Miles Conglomerate seeking vengeance against them as well.

However, he later found out that Lex owed William a favor. Now that he paid

back the favor, he no longer owed the Rockefellers anything.

Moreover, Alex had tried calling Lex once, yet he ended up being yelled at and threatened.

Spark had nothing to fear then!

So, he immediately hired some people to deal with Alex. Ring ring ring...

At that moment, a young model was massaging Spark in a club. When Spark received Scarface's call, his eyes lit up.

“So, has he been dealt with yet?”

Zr0tA

“Yes, Mr. Rockefeller! We’ve captured the brat, and a beauty too! She’s really quite the looker. This is the very first time I’ve seen such a beauty!”

Spark froze. “You guys captured Dorothy?”

Scarface nodded, “Yeah, yeah! I think her name was Dorothy.”

Spark was very much infatuated with Dorothy so he yelled into the phone, “Do

not lay a finger on that woman! She's mine! Where are you guys? I'll head over right now... Remember, do not lay a finger on her. I'll hand you another two million as soon as I arrive."

After hanging up the call, Spark pushed the young model away. Compared to Dorothy, the young model was mere trash.

"Oh Dorothy, I didn't want to make a move on you so soon. You walked right into this, this must be fate!"

Knowing that he was going to have sexual intercourse with Dorothy, he rushed to where Scarface was. He even decided to take a pill.

“Here I come, sister-in-law!”

However, he was shocked when he arrived at their meeting place. There wasn't any sister-in-law around!

In the rundown house, Scarface and the underlings were all kneeling down in a neat row. All of them were slapping themselves hard across their own faces.

Alex, on the other hand, was cockily sitting on a shelf, looking down at them. Spark became terrified by what he saw and tried to make a run for it.

However, there was no way that he could outrun Alex. In just a few moments, Spark was captured.

"A-Alex, what are you doing? You can't do this!"

Alex immediately slapped him across the face.

"What do you mean? Why can't I do anything to you? Who set the rules, huh?"

Another four slaps followed. Spark felt as if his head was spinning. He roared in anger, "Slap me again and I'll make you regret it!" Smack!

"Why can't I

slap you?"

Smack!

Zr0tA

“See if I’ll
regret this!”

Smack!

“Who’s regretting
now, huh?” Smack,
smack, SMACK!

Spark started noticing that his face was becoming numb from all the slaps. It was as if he had been electric shocked. He thought that he was going to die from all this beating. So, he decided to stop being stubborn and begged for mercy. “Please Bro, please stop slapping me! I’ll admit it, I was wrong!

I'm

sorry, please just stop! It hurts!"

Alex slapped again. "Who's your bro, huh?

What were you doing back then? Admit

your faults! Your father is trying to take

away my inheritance, and you want to take

my wife away! Do you really think I, Alex

Rockefeller, am some kind of weakling?"

Alex then grabbed Spark by his neck and

lifted him up. Alex stared straight into

his eyes. "No one can take anything from

me as long as it's mine. I will take everything back with my own two hands.

"Go back and tell your dad, what goes around comes around. Karma would soon befall him. The truth will soon prevail," Alex continued.

After that, Alex punched Spark right in the gut.

CHAPTER 44

The punch was filled with a strong flow of Chi. It would damage Spark's reproductive organs over time and in just a month, he would lose his ability to engage in sexual intercourse completely.

Alex left the rundown house and met up with Cheryl, who was waiting in the restaurant. They were going to have lunch together.

Before dealing with Spark, Alex had asked Cheryl to order some food and wait for him.

As he watched Alex walk away, Spark chided Scarface, "F*ck! Scarface, you scammer! I agreed to pay you so much money, and you're trying to scam me? Didn't you say you were the best fighter in Teal Street? How are you the best if you can't even deal with a mere boy toy?"

With a fractured shin, Scarface was just as

angry. "How dare you f*ckingscold me? You said he was a weakling! But he was strong and his movements were swift too. He could tear you into pieces with one arm!

You know what? I, Scarface, wouldn't just leave it this way. My big sister will be back in two days. We'll deal with that brat then!"

At the same time, Beatrice had arrived at the Assex mansion. She didn't have any classes in the evening, so she came home earlier than usual.

However, she noticed that her mother was mumbling to herself. Claire was mentioning names like 'useless piece of shit', 'trash', and 'ingrate'.

Beatrice took off her shoes and asked, "Mom, who are you muttering about? Didn't you kick out that Rockefeller idiot? Did he come to beg

you to take him back?"

Beatrice looked around the house, ready to kick Alex out again.

Zr0tA

“No!” Claire huffed. “That idiot is doing pretty well now, he hooked up with the granddaughter of the legendary doctor of California. I even got slapped at Ganoderma because of him! I’m just so annoyed!”

“What? That useless piece of sh*t slapped you? I’ll rip him apart!”

“No, he wasn’t the one who slapped me. It was one of the female patients there. I scolded the

granddaughter and got slapped... I wasn't angry because of the slap. I was mad that that ingrate hooked up with another woman. That was why he agreed to move out and live with her."

Beatrice gave her mother a thumbs up as soon as she heard that Claire had scolded the granddaughter of the legendary doctor of California.

"You're amazing, Mom! You scolded that b*tch just as you should! Besides, isn't this a good thing? If Sis knew about this, she

would finally give up on him, and we'll be able to get him out of our lives once and for all! Come on, don't be mad. Let's just have dinner, I'm so hungry."

Claire had already prepared dinner, everything was served on the table.

"Ah! Bleh!" Beatrice spat out a mouthful of aubergine. "Mom, what is this? Are you trying to poison me?"

She then tried to wash it down with some

soup. However she spat that out aswell, spitting it all over Claire's face, "Mom, is this medicine or soup? Why is it so bitter? Do you even know how to cook? This is disgusting compared to what that ingrate can do!"

"Oh whatever, let's just order takeout!"

Suddenly, Beatrice's voice echoed through the house again, "Ugh, Mom! How could you? My white clothes are all stained black! Did you even separate the dark and light colors?"

"What? Where?"

"Oh god, I think kicking out that ingrate was a mistake. Mom, please hire a maid, our house will end up in ruins if we don't!"

Suddenly, the doorbell chimed.

“Who are you looking for?” The two opened the door. A man and a woman, along with a little girl, were standing at their door.

They were the Carter family. Their daughter was the one who had almost choked to death from a piece of mountain hawthorn at Ganoderma.

Charles had explained everything to his wife, Hailey Lawson.

Hailey broke into cold sweat out of fear. Alex had revived his daughter and gave Dr. Coney the acupuncture method for free, which was why the legendary doctor of California knelt down to him. So, Hailey felt like she should thank Alex personally and reward him greatly.

Charles smiled and asked, "May I ask, is the young doctor Rockefeller around?"

Beatrice pouted, "What young doctor Rockefeller? You're at the wrong place."

“Huh? Wait, is this not Dorothy Assex’s house? We’re looking for Alex Rockefeller, the young doctor.”

Zr0tA

"Alex is just a useless piece of sh*t. When did he become some kind of young doctor?"

You're joking

right? And no, he's not here, that Rockefeller ingrate has been kicked out of this house!

Our daughter divorced him! If you'd like to find him, go look under a bridge or something!"

"What?" Charles was shocked. "Who are you? How dare you call the legendary young doctor useless?"

Beatrice replied, "What else is he? You guys must have been fooled. You should cut ties with him."

Just then, Claire recognized Charles and the little girl. She was surprised. "Weren't you just at Ganoderma? Dr. Coney saved your daughter, right? Why are you looking for that useless ingrate?"

Charles's expression darkened as the two continued insulting him.

This whole family was insulting Alex over and over again. How did he even survive living in this household?

He said coldly, "My daughter wasn't saved by Dr. Coney, she was saved by Alex! We came here just to thank him personally, and we'd like to give him a mansion and some pocket change. I didn't expect that the young doctor had been kicked out by you. So, please excuse us!"

After that, the family of three turned around and left in their luxurious car, driving off in a hurry.

Zr0tA

Claire and Beatrice turned to each other,
both filled with disbelief.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 45

“Papa, why did they call Uncle Alex useless? He isn’t!” The little girl, Zoey Carter, pouted angrily.

She was almost six years old so she was growing to be more thoughtful.

She was able to escape death that afternoon all thanks to Alex. When she

was still in her spirit state, all she felt was loneliness and coldness. Alex was like a campfire in the winter, keeping her warm, which was why it left a strong impression on her.

Charles replied, "They don't know what they're saying."

Hailey added, "Let's help him out in some way, rather than babble on about those two. Let's see, how do we find him... I heard after William's accident, his wife

became vegetative, she's been in the hospital ever since."

Charles said, "Let's go to the main city to find Cheryl." Just then, Alex and Cheryl went back to the hospital.

Alex was going to help his mother discharge from the hospital. However, Cheryl felt like Brittany should stay for another few days just in case.

Alex smiled, "There's no need for that. I'm more familiar with my mom's condition

than you.”

ZrótA

Annoyed, Cheryl bit her lower lip and glared at him, "I'm her primary physician, how could I not be familiar with her condition?"

ZroTA

Alex was slightly flustered by the look that she was giving him. He waved dismissively, "But it's the truth.

You're not necessarily more familiar with her condition just because you're her primary physician. I

mean, how about this? I know you frequently have period cramps, but you don't know how to deal with it, don't you?"

'What?'

Cheryl was extremely embarrassed as her face flushed into a bright shade of pink.

She did indeed have period cramps, even now.

“How did you know about that?”

“I smelled it.” Alex touched his nose and stared at the area in between her thighs.

“You... pervert!” Cheryl was so embarrassed that she picked up a file and flung it towards Alex.

However, Alex dodged her attack easily, "I can help you with it." "I don't need your help!"

Suddenly, Charles and his family came to the hospital.

Zr0tA

Noticing Alex, Charles jogged over and grabbed Alex's hand, "Dr. Rockefeller, I'm so glad that I found you!"

Zr0tA

Alex was slightly taken aback by his friendly gesture.

Realizing what the family was here for, Alex smiled, "Oh don't sweat it Mr. Carter, it's not a big deal, you don't have to thank me."

Hailey spoke up, "It may not be a big deal for you, Mr. Rockefeller. But you saved our whole family! If anything happened to my daughter, we would never be able to feel happiness in our lives. So, here's a little gift, please accept it! You'd be

looking down on us if you don't!"

"Well..."

Alex was in a difficult position and still slightly taken aback by their friendly gestures. Suddenly, Zoey hugged Alex's thigh and said, "Mister, two meanies were bad-mouthing you! They said you were divorced too. When Zoey grows up, Zoey will marry Mister, okay?"

The young child's innocent words lightened

the atmosphere and everyone laughed cheerily.

Hailey grabbed Alex's hand and shoved a document bag at him, smiling, "So it's settled! Just have this little gift! Who knows? We might have to trouble you again someday!"

Hailey was still fairly youthful, around the age of 27. She was beautiful and charming with a great fashion sense as well. She looked mature and alluring as she reached the peak of her blossoming

youth and beauty.

However, with just a gentle touch, Alex could tell that something was wrong.

Zr0tA

"Mrs. Carter, have you been experiencing insomnia lately? Do you frequently sleepwalk and have nightmares? Do you feel extremely tired out?"

Zr0tA

Hailey froze, then nodded profusely,
“Yeah, yeah! I don’t even know what’s
wrong with me! I just keep having
nightmares, and...”

Just then, Hailey let her words trail off, her
face flushed.

Charles was surprised. “Oh my dear, why
didn’t you tell me? And sleepwalking too!
Are you ill?”

Hailey’s expression turned odd as she

replied, "It only started a few days ago, they're just dreams, no big deal."

Cheryl spoke up, "Can I try feeling your pulse?"

Hailey smiled. "Oh of course! Young Dr. Coney is pretty famous in the medical field too."

She then showed her fair wrist to Cheryl.

After around half a minute, Cheryl narrowed her eyes, "That's weird, this pulsing pattern... how did you notice it?"

She asked Alex but he just smiled and kept silent.

Hailey wasn't ill. There was just an evil entity following her around. He immediately sensed its presence upon touching her hand.

Moreover, Hailey's cheeks were abnormally flushed; her eyes were red; and she had dark circles under her eyes.

Besides, Hailey seemed to not want to talk about her dreams earlier. The entity must be quite powerful now, torturing her in her dreams.

Hailey was slightly shaken up. "Alex, is this bad?"

Alex replied, "Not really, I'll help you get rid of it completely."

He then pointed towards the stool at the side, "Please sit here, Mrs. Carter."

Hailey smiled and said, "Oh you don't have to call me Mrs. Carter, you can call me Lawson. Or if you don't mind, you can call me by my first name, Hailey."

It was obvious that Hailey was trying to grow closer to Alex.

Alex didn't put much thought into it, "Okay then, sit here, Hailey. I'll massage your head a little."

Cheryl thought, 'Is he going to use the Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell again? Does this method work on everything?'

Her eyes were fixated on them, focusing mainly on Alex's movements.

However, Alex didn't use the Thirteen Acupunctures of Hell on Hailey. Instead,

he used the Bahiskara Acupuncture from the ghost doctor series in the Ultimate Book of Medicine. There were seven acupuncture points in it.

Zr0tA

With just seven points, the entity will vanish
from her body.

Zr0tA

Hailey was dressed stylishly in a white blouse and tight jeans. Her skin was pale and smooth as well. Sitting down on the stool, she looked extremely stunning and elegant.

However, Alex was standing right in front of her. Staring down at her from such a high angle, his eyes couldn't help but wander.

CHAPTER 46

Hailey was gorgeous and curvy; she looked like a beautiful painting.

Alex immediately closed his eyes, forcing himself to not look or think about it. He tried remembering Claire's twisted face as she yelled at him. This helped him calm himself down from the impure thoughts he had just awhile ago.

Within a minute, all seven acupuncture points had been pressed on. The electric Chi needle only required seven seconds to take effect.

After seven seconds, Alex asked, "Okay, I'm done Hailey. How do you feel?"

Hailey rubbed her temples and exclaimed, "Oh my god, my head doesn't hurt anymore! My temples used to hurt so badly before. Oh kiddo, you're absolutely amazing! If I fall ill again someday, I'll come to you!"

While talking, Hailey swayed her body side to side, causing her chest to jiggle slightly as well.

Huh, in just a few minutes, Alex went from being called Dr. Rockefeller to Alex, and now kiddo.

Their relationship seemed to be getting more casual with each change in nickname.

“Mister, can you massage my head as well?
I get headaches all the time too!” Zoey
asked innocently as she looked up at Alex
with her big doe-like eyes.

Zr0tA

“You get headaches too?”

“Yeah!” She cupped her face with her tiny hands, “Whenever Mom tells me to play piano, I get headaches!”

They all laughed at Zoey’s words.

With that, the Carter family left Alex with the document bag. But before leaving the hospital, Hailey exchanged numbers with Alex.

Cheryl, on the other hand, couldn't hold in her curiosity any longer. "What was wrong with Lawson? You were using a different acupuncture method on her, and that wasn't the Thirteen Acupuncture of Hell. What was that?"

Alex replied dismissively, "You wouldn't understand it even if I told you."

"You... you're so petty!" Cheryl pouted.

Alex thought that her angry expression looked quite adorable.

Still staring at her, Alex smiled. "When you've learned the Thirteen Acupuncture of Hell, come see me again. I'll teach you this one next."

"Deal. Pinky promise?" She said as she reached out her pinky to him. Alex held in a chuckle. "Pinky promise? Alright then, pinky promise."

After sealing their promise, Alex opened the document bag and found two cards laying inside. One was a bank card while the other was black and thicker. There

was an engraving on one side as well—

'Maple

Villa'.

Zr0tA

Cheryl was shocked. "This is the keycard from Maple Villa! Hailey gave you one of the villas there, what a gift!"

Alex knew about it as well: Maple Villa was a small area filled with grand villas and considered one of the top ten upscale areas in California. The starting price for these villas was at least 80 thousand dollars. So this villa would be easily over 100 million dollars, and he didn't even know how much money was in the bank card either.

Alex's family was extremely wealthy,

and this was just merely pocket change to him. However, Alex shook his head and said, "This gift is too much."

Cheryl smiled. "Oh don't say that! Waylon Realty is very successful and Maple Villa is one of the Carter family's properties as well. Giving a property as a gift is probably not that big of a deal to them. Besides, Lawson seemed pretty set on befriending you, you legendary doctor. You won't be able to refuse this offer now."

Suddenly, a tall chubby man

came into the hospital. "Alex,

Alex! I heard that Madame

Brittany woke up?"

"Oh, Nicholas. You caught on with the news

pretty quickly." Alex smiled.

The man was Nicholas Hudson, Alex's high school classmate. He also used to be one of his lackeys.

Before the accident, Alex used to have quite a large group of lackeys. However, all of them stopped following him after the

accident. Some even started insulting and making fun of him, as if degrading him would elevate their own status.

Zr0tA

Nicholas was different from the others. He contacted Alex frequently despite Alex's situation. He was indeed a good man.

However, he didn't have a wealthy or powerful background. He relied on compensations to survive. He would move to multiple different areas, and earned millions of compensations from companies who were trying to takeover the property he was living in.

Nicholas would visit Brittany every now

and then, so he knew Cheryl as well.

His chubby face was plastered with a bright smile. "Oh hello, Dr. Coney!"

He then turned to Alex. "I befriended a nurse here and exchanged numbers with her. She was the one who informed me."

Seeing that Alex had company, Cheryl made small talk with them and excused herself.

CHAPTER 47

Nicholas ran into Brittany's ward and said,
"Madame Brittany, you're really awake!
What a relief..."

"Oh it's you, Nicholas!"

They made small talk, catching up with each other.

Alex said, "You came here at just the right time. I'm going to help my mom get discharged from the hospital. Would you please help me get the necessary paperwork?"

Nicholas pulled him aside. "Alex, when Madame Brittany is discharged, where would you guys go? Are you going to bring her to the Asse mansion?"

Nicholas knew exactly how cruel the Assexes had been to Alex.

Alex pondered and replied, "We might stay in a hotel first. I'll buy a proper place later."

Nicholas's eyes widened, "You have the money to buy one?" Alex fake coughed and lied, "My mom does!"

With this explanation, Nicholas bought his lie completely.

After all, Brittany used to be the CEO of Rockefeller Group, and everyone knew her as a strong and independent woman. Even if she were to be stingy with her wealth, her pocket change would still be much more than what normal people could earn.

However, Nicholas added, "I think you guys should stay in a hotel. Just come to my place! My family doesn't have much, but we have multiple properties. There's an empty one as of now, you can move in anytime you'd like!"

“Sure!”

After discharging his mother from the hospital, Alex bid Cheryl goodbye.

Knowing that they were going to stay at Nicholas's place, Brittany didn't question anything.

She had heard about her son's experiences with the Assexes after waking up. She was extremely angry about it, but she stayed

silent.

In an hour, they reached the place riding
Nicholas's car.

The building was 18 floors tall, and the
apartment was on the 9th. It was around
150 square miles, a very ideal home. Alex
furrowed his eyebrows upon seeing the
interior of the apartment.

It wasn't because it was too rundown, but
on the contrary—it just looked absolutely

amazing.

The interior design was extraordinary. It had everything that they needed as well.

Nicholas was right, anyone could just move in.

Zr0tA

“Nicholas, are all the units your family rents out well furnished like this too?”

Zr0tA

Nicholas chuckled, "Alex, you probably just didn't know that most rented apartments are well furnished. Who would want to rent them if they weren't?"

Alex didn't question any further. He just thought the apartment was a little too well furnished.

After checking the apartment out, Alex headed downstairs to get their luggage.

Suddenly, a woman's voice echoed from the entrance, "Nicholas Hudson, are you out of your mind? You're letting these people stay in your wedding apartment? Who are they to you?"

Alex turned around and saw a group of people walking in. The one yelling was a young woman. She looked infuriated with narrowed eyes.

Nicholas's lower lip was trembling, "Sis, Brother-in-Law, you- why are you guys here?"

The ones who had barged in were Nicholas's sister and her husband, Merida Hudson and Sean Wellington. Following behind them were Nicholas's parents.

The father approached Nicholas and slapped him across the face, scolding, "You twat! Who gave you permission to do this? I bought this so that you'd have a place to move in with your significant other after getting married!

Do you even want to marry? How could you let someone stay here this easily?

I'll cut ties with you if you dare let them
stay!"

"Dad, Alex is my close friend."

Zr0tA

“Bullsh*t! If you really were friends, he wouldn't be staying in your wedding apartment.”

Zr0tA

Alex felt a little awkward. He really didn't expect Nicholas to offer his wedding apartment for the both of them to stay in.

"Please don't be mad, Mr. Hudson. We're not staying here. In fact, we already have somewhere else. We just wanted to check out Nicholas's apartment."

Alex explained.

"Pfft, don't you dare lie to me. Patty from downstairs called just to inform me that my brother was going to let you guys stay here!

Besides, you claim that you have somewhere else to stay. So, where is that then, huh?" Merida yelled, visibly annoyed.

Alex sighed, "I really do have a place to stay. It's at Maple Villa. Look, I have the keycard."

Sean looked at the keycard and realized that the number 8 was engraved into it.

He smirked coldly. "You're such a liar.

Really? Maple Villa? This keycard is

obviously a fake!"

Merida turned to Sean and asked, "How do you know that, babe?"

Sean cockily looked down on Alex and explained, "My company did the furnishing for every property in Maple Villa. Everyone knows that the 8th Villa is a gift from the owner of Maple Villa, Mr. Carter, to his wife. There's no way it's yours."

CHAPTER 48

Merida cackled and pinched Nicholas's ear.

"Listen to your brother-in-law, you naive child. What kind of people are you even befriending now? Do you know how expensive the villas are in Maple Villa? Your brother-in-law wouldn't even be able to afford one in a million years!"

"Trying to trick us with a fake keycard? You are absolutely ridiculous!"

Alex was speechless. He didn't want his mother to face any insults. She had only just been discharged from the hospital. He turned to Nicholas. "Nicholas, you can talk it out with your family. We'll be off."

Nicholas asked, "Off to where?"

Merida smirked and joked, "Where?"

They're definitely going to Maple Villa and

stay in some grand villa of course! Why would they stay in such a rundown place, right? Will they even get used to such poverty?"

Sean laughed at them too, treating them like clowns in a circus.

Alex replied, "My keycard is real. Mr. Carter gave it to me just a while ago. Nicholas, it's alright, I know how much you care about me. I'll be off with my mom now."

He then helped Brittany out of the
apartment.

Zr0tA

During the whole conversation, Brittany did not say a single word and watched her son navigate the whole situation. He was calm and collected, handling the situation maturely. Brittany was very glad that he handled it so well.

Zr0tA

Nicholas suggested, "I'll drive you guys there." The luggage was still in the car after all.

Sean continued to make fun of them, "Does he really think he's some hotshot? As if Mr. Carter would ever give him his villa. Babe, we should follow them and uncover his lies, just to prevent your brother from getting scammed."

"You're right."

Nicholas then drove towards *Maple Villa*.
He even confirmed the destination with
Alex multiple times on the way.

Sean, Merida, and the
others followed behind.

"My family is following us
too."

"I don't mind!" Alex said. He initially
intended to return the keycard to Charles.
However, he changed his mind and wanted
to buy the house instead.

At the entrance security of *Maple Villa*,

the keycard gave Nicholas' car access immediately. However, Sean's car was stopped by security. He then explained to the guards, "We're together, relatives."

On the inside, Sean was extremely shocked. He thought to himself, 'Is the keycard actually real?'

Merida huffed, "Babe, didn't you drive my brother's car to work here? Maybe the system registered his car, so he could go in. Ours is new, so we can't get in."

Zr0tA

Sean slapped his thigh out of realization, "Oh yeah, how could I forget?"

Merida added, "Let's see how they will face us once they find out that they can't access the property! These poor and cunning people don't have the right to hang out with my brother."

They reached the property of the 8th villa.

Sean was the first one to get out of the car.

He pointed at the villa smugly and said,
“This is number 8, I’ll see what tricks you
can pull. If you really do have access to this
villa, I’ll eat all of the grass in this
garden!”

Alex helped Brittany out of the car and
glared at him, “Sure! If you don’t keep your
promise, then you’re nothing more than a
warthog-faced buffoon.”

Alex then took the keycard out of his
pocket and swiped it on the card reader.

With a small beep, the door opened automatically.

Sean froze. He was hoping to watch Alex humiliate himself in front of them.

Merida and her parents, who were standing behind Sean, stared in disbelief as well.

“Remember to keep your promise. Eat the whole garden up, all but the

flowers.” Alex left them a reminder and helped Brittany into the villa.

“There’s no way, no way!”

Zr0tA

“Number 8 was a gift from Mr. Carter to his wife! The furnishing was unique and personalised; it’s exceptionally grand and luxurious. How did you even get that keycard?”

Zr0tA

“You must’ve found this keycard somewhere!” Sean yelled. He just couldn’t believe it at all and he definitely didn’t want to eat the grass.

Merida added, “He might’ve stolen it! Babe, don’t you know Manager Miles from Waylon Realty? Call him and ask about this! If we managed to catch a thief, you would be rewarded! It’ll be much easier for you to get more projects to work on in Waylon!”

Sean nodded and pulled out his phone, about to make a call. Someone jogged

up to the villa entrance. It was Charles Carter.

Sean was overjoyed, he immediately greeted Charles, "Mr. Carter, I'm Sean from Mobila Furnishing. Has your keycard been stolen? Look, the thief is over there! He even intends to live in your villa. He's got some balls to steal your villa, I'll give him that."

Charles turned to look at Alex and Brittany, visibly puzzled. "You're saying that he's a thief?"

“Yeah, he stole the keycard to Number 8.”

“What the f*ck do you mean stole it?”

Charles yelled as he slapped Sean across

the face. “Alex is my wife’s godbrother.

Number 8 is indeed his, and you’re calling

him a thief? Are you looking for a death

wish?

Scram!”

CHAPTER 49

Charles just witnessed Alex save his daughter and cure his wife's illness. Dr. Coney even knelt down to Alex! He could only dream to befriend such a powerful person, and yet this Sean guy was trying to destroy his chances.

Both Sean and Merida were shocked to their core.

Just then, Charles added, "Mobila Furnishing, huh? Your CEO, Mr. Edward, wanted to invite me to dinner earlier. Tell him that I have to refuse his offer and I'd like to cancel our partnership completely."

"Ah!" Sean was terrified; the color immediately drained from his face.

He was the manager of Mobila Furnishing, but Mr. Edward was the CEO, the director of the company. If Mr. Edward was to find out about this, there was no way that he'd

be let off easy!

Being fired was the lightest
punishment Sean could get.

With a loud thud, Sean dropped
his knees to the ground.

“Mr. Carter, Mr. Carter, please spare me! I
was wrong, I didn’t know any better.
Please spare me, I... I’ll slap myself now.”

With that, Sean slapped himself hard on the
face multiple times.

Merida's face was pale as she was obviously terrified as well. They still had to pay off the loans of their new property and car. If Sean were to lose his job now, all of this would be all for naught.

Zr0tA

She immediately started pleading with Alex, and asked Nicholas to help plead as well.

Alex then spoke up. "Charles, it's fine, just forget it. This guy is my friend's brother-in-law. He's always looking down on others, and maybe just a little mental."

Since Alex spoke up, Charles immediately agreed to let Sean off easy.

Sean and his family didn't dare to stay any longer. They immediately thanked Alex and bid their goodbyes.

Suddenly, Brittany spoke up. "Don't forget to finish the grass in the garden."

Brittany used to be the wife of the CEO of a company that was worth 300 billion, she was a strong and independent woman herself as well.

Although she didn't speak up earlier, she still had opinions. Sean and Merida had constantly insulted her darling little son, so how could she just sit back and watch?

Upon hearing her words, Sean gulped bitterly. Yet all he could do was nod profusely.

Sean then walked to the door and started eating the grass in the garden. "He's..."

Charles was slightly taken aback.

Alex replied dismissively, "Let him be. A little punishment would help him learn his lesson."

Just then, Hailey and Zoey came by the villa as well. It seemed that their family was living next door in Number 9.

Zr0tA

Hailey had put a lot of thought into giving him the villa. Who wouldn't want a legendary doctor living next to them?

Zoey hugged Alex by his thighs whereas Hailey made small talk with Brittany.

On the other hand, Nicholas felt extremely awkward, so he bid Alex farewell.

Alex walked him to the door and said, "Nicholas, we're homies, you get what I

mean? If you ever need anything, you can always count on me.”

Hailey then invited Alex and his mother to have dinner at their place. Alex just couldn't refuse their offer. Hailey was too friendly and hospitable.

During their meetup, Alex tried to return the bank card to Charles. However, Charles insisted on giving it to Alex, saying that Alex would be looking down on him if he returned it.

Alex couldn't do anything else but hold onto the card.

They proceeded with dinner as both families had a thoroughly amazing time.

In Number 8, Alex gave Brittany another message as they finally had time to have a long talk with each other.

Brittany's was full of mixed emotions. "My son, this past year must've been so hard on you!

"I'd like to visit your father's grave
tomorrow."

ZrótA

Alex nodded. "I'll have to buy a car first."

Alex went to a BMW dealership store in California the next morning. However, just as he entered the store, he bumped into Beatrice.

Beatrice was with her clique. When she saw Alex, she approached him with a smug smirk. "Heh, Rockefeller. What's a useless piece of sh*t like you doing here? Are you trying to look for a job?"

CHAPTER 50

Beatrice and Claire had met the Carters yesterday.

Since Charles mentioned that he was going to give Alex a villa and ten million dollars, she was in disbelief the entire day. However, after putting some thought into it, she figured that Charles was just lying to trigger them.

Claire had even come to a conclusion that Alex didn't like how he was kicked out, hence he asked Charles to help him out by stopping by their villa to trigger them.

She even came up with a reason as to why Charles was willing to help as well.

Alex hooked up with Cheryl after all. Since Dr. Coney saved Charles' daughter, it wasn't hard to ask him for help.

Alex was still nothing more than a useless piece of sh*t in the eyes of the Assexes.

Alex was somewhat surprised. "Why are you here?"

Beatrice huffed. "I'm here to buy a car. Why else would I be in a car dealership store? Do you think I'm as lowly as you to be here to find a job? By the way, do you think just any loser can work in a BMW dealership store? Are you sure you came

to the right place? Are you sure you
weren't actually looking for a Nissan
instead?"

Zr0tA

“Beatrice, who is he? Don’t tell me, he’s that useless brother-in-law you keep complaining about?” A girl in a skirt snickered as she scanned Alex.

Zr0tA

She was *Mona Weiss*, Beatrice's university classmate.

They were in a group of four. The other two were guys. The one with a gold necklace was *Wilson Jordan* while the other in casual clothing was *Sam Culver*.

Beatrice clicked her tongue. "You're right, it's that useless loser. But mind your words, soon he won't be my brother-in-law anymore. He's such a loser that my family divorced him!"

“So he’s your ex-brother-in-law! Hey dude!” Wilson smiled. “To be frank, the job application requirements of this store really is hard to achieve. Any average person wouldn’t be able to get a job here. However, my brother is the manager, if you need some help with job applications, you just need to ask. An ex- brother-in-law was still once a brother-in-law, right?”

Beatrice huffed again. “What do you mean by that brother-in-law bullsh*t? I’ve never

treated him like one. Why are you even helping him, Wilson?"

Expressionless, Alex said calmly, "Are you done? If you are, then get out of my way. I'm trying to buy a car here."

'What? Buy a car?'

The four were stunned. 'Wasn't he here to get a job?'

Beatrice was especially stunned and she

became extremely annoyed by Alex's cocky tone and expression. She clenched her fists and yelled, "Hey, you useless loser. Don't you dare try to bluff your way out of this. Can you even afford any of the cars here?"

Zr0tA

With a chilling gaze, Alex snapped. "And what does that have to do with you? Since you want to cut ties with me, I don't owe you anything. And I definitely don't need to endure your tantrums. Mind your business or I'll put you in your place by force."

Zr0tA

Alex then barged his way through the group.

He walked straight into the hall and called for one of the fairly attractive female employees there. He pointed to one of the cars and said, "Hey you, I'd like this car, the red one; the best one. I'd like to take it on the road now, is that possible?"

The sales lady was fairly young and she seemed inexperienced.

She was puzzled by Alex's requests. The car that Alex wanted was one of the luxurious BMW cars, an imported M8. The base price was easily over two million dollars.

If she successfully sold this car, she would earn thousands in commission.

After a brief pause, the sales lady rushed over and nodded profusely. "Ah yes, yes, that wouldn't be a problem. I'll run you through the process immediately. Would you like to apply for

an installment or pay upfront?”

“Upfront.”

“Hold on.” Beatrice rushed over in disbelief.

“You don’t have that kind of money. This thing costs two million dollars. What, do you think this costs just a mere 200?”

Alex was so fed up with her. “What’s it to you?”

Beatrice huffed. "I know everything about you. You even had to kneel before my mom just to get 500 thousand dollars, pleading her like the lowly pest that you are. Do you even have two million dollars?"

Zr0tA

Lord Lex Gunther did send him a large sum of money to pay the favor back a few days ago. However, it was returned to him later on. So, Alex should still be a poor lowly person.

Beatrice then turned to the sales lady.

“Don’t be fooled. I think he’s just trying to flirt with you.”

“Huh?” The sales lady was surprised and confused.

Maintaining a cold expression, Alex said,
“What would you do if I could afford it?”

Beatrice glared at him cockily. “Keep
bluffing, loser. If you really could afford
it, I’ll call you Daddy a hundred times! If
you can’t, you’d have to kneel before me
and lick my shoes!”

CHAPTER 0051 - 55

'He does not deserve it; let me have it instead!' thought Wilson Jordan.

Alex Rockefeller nodded. "One hundred times is a lot. I will let you off easy this time. Saying it once is enough."

He then took out his bank card and gave it

to the saleswoman. "Swipeaway!"

Instantly, the saleslady got to work. The company had placed a lot of attention on selling a two-million-dollar car, thus making the transaction process easier. It was not long before the purchase went through.

Beep!

The sound of a successful payment made.

The saleslady handed Alex his bankcard and various receipts in excitement. "This is yours, brother. Please keep them safe. I will get to it right away. Be back in a half-hour!"

Beatrice Assex was startled. "How...how..
.did you get so much money?"

Alex smirked. "Well, well, Beatrice Assex.
Can I count on you to keep your promise,
especially as the campus belle of
California State University? Hm, I
wonder what will happen if news about
you breaking promises starts spreading
around campus?"

"You!"

Beatrice had a reputation to keep.
She briefly contemplated the
severity of the consequence before
calling out "daddy" in rage.

She then left immediately.

How could she stay after the embarrassment
she had been put through?

Alex, Mona Weiss, and the rest looked at Alex with a strange expression before hurriedly going after Beatrice.

Half an hour later, Alex was in his BMW M8.

He slammed on the throttle and left the car dealership.

He had gone for this model because Madame Brittany Rockefeller, used to drive this car.

Beatrice and a few of her friends sat in their BMW 3-series parked right by the entrance and looked at Alex as he sped away in his brand new M8.

Bam!

Beatrice punched the car window. "Damn it! The audacity! How dare he! I will get my revenge one day!"

"Beatrice, you mentioned he was a poor and homeless dude. Where did he get the cash to buy a luxury car?" asked Mona.

Beatrice snorted. "Recently, that jerk got together with the granddaughter of California's Divine Doctor. She must have given him the money, that bitch!"

Figuring that he would be visiting his father's grave, Alex took a detour to Gale Street, intending to buy a bouquet and fruits.

After taking a turn, a black Volkswagen came out of nowhere and rammed straight into the front of his minutes-old BMW.

Bam!

The front of the car was now twisted out of shape. The brand spanking new car was instantly reduced into a pile of scrap metal.

The airbags that sprung out when the collision occurred almost sent Alex into a concussion. Fortunately, the Force was there to protect him.

The next instant, he became incessantly infuriated.

A brand new car, worth a whopping two million dollars, wrecked in less than half an hour after leaving the dealership. He did not get to warm up the seat yet.

Suddenly, a loud noise exploded from behind, as the car was rattled once again. The rear of the car had been smashed in.

"Damn it! This is no accident!"

Pushing open the door, he got out of the car.

It was then that a dozen people came out of those cars and surrounded his BMW.

Among them, a bald guy looked at Alex in disbelief. "What luck you have!" he exclaimed. "No blood nor bruises whatsoever! Come with us; Princess Fleur wants to see you."

CHAPTER 0052

“Princess Fleur? I do not know of any dumb princess here. Get out of my way!” Alex Rockefeller snorted.

The bald guy became livid. “You insulted Princess Fleur!”

To which Alex smiled, “Who knows, that

bitch of a princess? Why is she looking for me? Perhaps she is an escort at the club? Sorry, I am not interested."

"Get him, brothers!"

Zr0tA

Alex let out a curse and channeled his inner energy. The next second he was right in front of the bald guy.

Smack!

He slapped him, right across the face, with full force.

The bald guy did not expect Alex to take the offense and attack him first. He did

not have time to react and was instantly on the floor, hacking out a few bloody teeth. His face had blown up, swollen like a pufferfish.

After putting one down, Alex did not wait. Instead, he charged toward the next person.

"Argh!"

“Get our weapons! Surround him!”

A few went back to their cars and got batons, sticks, and blades. Upon their return, however, a few of their comrades were lying on the floor, grabbing their legs and moaning in pain.

Their legs had been broken.

"Argh!"

One charged at Alex and hit his shoulder with a big club.

Yet, Alex did not even flinch. He grabbed onto the club and turned it on its owner, driving it straight down on his head.

A cracked skull now added to Alex's long list of injuries.

He had been holding back half of his power, but it still felt too heavy-handed. The Force changed him completely, with his speed and strength increasing exponentially nowadays.

Whoosh!

A machete sliced through the air.

Zr0tA

It was then when Alex realized that he could clearly see the machete in motion and the trajectory it took.

He struck the blade hard with the club in his hand.

Clank!

The machete flew away, embedding itself deep into the M8's window.

Meanwhile, Alex grabbed hold of the man's head and ran full speed toward the hood of another car.

Bam!

Zr0tA

The man did not even get to scream in pain as he was brutally knocked out by Alex, who smacked his head flat out onto the hood of the car.

Everything happened in the blink of an eye.

Zr0tA

These people exuded a murderous aura and were no stranger to brawls, skirmishes, blood, and gore. They did not expect things to turn out like this. Facing Alex, they were nothing but little mushrooms, harmless and defenseless.

Swinging the club, Alex, once again, rushed toward his attackers.

“Hold on, let us talk!” Someone swung his machete around and said.

Clank!

Alex parried his machete away, bringing down the club onto his leg, and breaking it. "We will talk after we fight."

Another leg was broken.

"Thrashing my new car, eh? Who do you

think you are?!" roared Alex.

And another.

Zr0tA

“Is this how you send an invitation?”

Crack!

Everyone else couldn't escape fate either as their legs too were shattered by Alex.

Finally, he approached the bald guy, the only one who hadn't injured his legs yet.

The bat was rather sturdy and remained unbroken after shattering many legs.

Alex rested the club on the bald guy's belly and snickered, "Well, well. I suppose the invitation did not work on me, eh? Tell me, why is this escort looking for me?"

The bald guy stole a glimpse at the club, afraid that a slight motion from Alex would mean the end of him. He hurriedly

replied, "Scarface. You broke his leg. He is Princess Fleur's subordinate, and we were ordered to come and get you."

"Oh, Scarface? I thought it was someone else." Alex raised the club and jammed it downward, hard.

“Argh!”

The bald guy shrieked in extreme pain.

“What the heck are you yelling for? I did not hit you,” Alex retorted.

Two-thirds of the club were embedded deep into the concrete road between his thighs.

The bald guy looked on in horror.

Scarface messed with the wrong person
this time. Not even Princess Fleur could
take him down!

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0053

Alex Rockefeller lifted the bald guy by his collar and said, "You have to pay for the damages, three million dollars!"

"Um, well, I do not have that much money!"

"Perhaps we have to pay Princess Escort a visit then!"

Shoving the tied-up bald guy into his BMW M8, Alex pulled out the embedded machete from the window and punctured the deployed airbags.

Vroom!

The engines revved to life.

Fortunately, although somewhat wrecked, it was still drivable.

Zr0tA

Nudging the Volkswagen out of his way, Alex drove the M8 away from the accident site, headed straight for Princess Fleur.

His curiosity was piqued. Who exactly was Princess Fleur?

On his way there, the car made all sorts of noises, its components falling apart as he drove along. It was quite a sight for onlookers and had attracted plenty of attention, more so than a brand-new

BMW would.

“Gosh, isn’t that an M8? What a pity!”

“Seems like a newly-bought car too,
even the license plate is not up yet.
Hold on...Beatrice, could it be your
ex-brother-in-law’s car?”

It was a pure coincidence for them to
witness the sight before them.

Wilson Jordan accelerated the car, and Beatrice Assex managed to get a good look. "Hahaha! It's that idiot's new car! Oh, what joy!"

"I don't even think it's insured yet.

Wonderful! Serves him right!" added Sam Culver.

It was not long before Alex arrived at a river pier.

The bald guy pointed at a rustic wooden cabin by the riverbank and told Alex that Princess Fleur was currently inside.

"I'll be damned! She lives there?"

Dragging the bald guy along, Alex walked

toward the cabin.

With one forceful kick, he broke down the door and shoved the bald guy in.

"Argh!"

Zr0tA

Within seconds, a few men rushed toward him.

“Who are you? Why are you here at the Blossom Mansion?”

“Do you know what this place is?”

Zr0tA

Alex replied with a face of indifference,
“Well, Princess Escort, I am sorry, but
Princess Fleur invited me over.”

One of the men was taken aback. “How dare
you insult the princess? Die!”

In a swift motion, Alex raised his leg and
kicked the oncoming attacker. The man
was sent flying like a cannonball, finally
landing on the ground after crashing into
a few chairs.

Alex looked at a man standing next to him.

“Tell Princess Escort that I am here.”

The man was rooted to the ground as he looked on in horror.

“Get over there!”

With no respite, he was sent flying before

crash-landing onto his comrade's body.

"Get the hell out here, Princess Escort!"

ZroTA

Alex roared. His voice reverberated in the cabin like a thunderous roar.

Clack! Clack! Clack!

Footsteps could be heard coming from a spiral staircase inside the cabin. Alex shifted his focus in the direction of the sound.

A young lady, dressed in a fiery red dress and

red heels, descended from the staircase.

As black as coal, her hair was tied up into two buns, gently bobbing with her movements.

It was a sight lovely to behold. Alex suddenly found himself quite distracted. Who would have expected a stunner here by the riverbanks?

“What did you call me?”

She came to Alex, exuding a flirtatious vibe.

Zr0tA

With her tall, slender figure coupled with heels, she was only a tad shorter than Alex.

“You are Princess Fleur?? Alex found her sharp gaze a little unsettling.

“That is right, or as you said, Princess Escort. You seem like you know a thing or two. If you defeat me, I do not mind being your escort.”

The moment she finished speaking, her expression abruptly changed.

She leaped forward, raising her leg, and swiftly brought it down onto Alex, doing a dropkick all while in a dress.

Alex was startled beyond belief.

CHAPTER 0054

The lady's heel smashed into Alex
Rockefeller's shoulder.

Zr0tA

Yet, he seemed not at all affected.

As the Force engaged its self-defense measures, it almost dislocated her ankles.

The next moment, Alex grabbed hold of her feet and lifted her up.

It was a funny sight to behold.

The moment she leaped forward, she instantly regretted her decision. She totally forgot that she was wearing a dress. At that very moment, it was as embarrassing as it could get.

She fought back with all her might but faced Alex, a strong, undefeatable character; her actions were nothing but a scratch on the back for him. He grasped her waist and slammed her down on a table nearby.

Bam!

A loud thud could be heard.

Zr0tA

Fortunately, she shielded her face from the impact with her hands. Otherwise, that face of hers would be gone.

That being said, her chest hit the edge of the table hard upon impact, and she winced in pain.

Pushing her down, Alex gave her a mighty slap on the back. A loud crackle was heard, and a swollen bruise mark instantly appeared on the lady's body.

“Princess Fleur, right? I just cannot fathom your audacity, ordering people to thrash my car!”

Another hard smack on her back followed the remark.

Princess Fleur, with tear-filled eyes, cried out in pain.

As one of the Three Great Chieftains of California's underworld, she did not expect to suffer such humiliating defeat, particularly in front of all her subordinates.

She was extremely livid.

“I am not a smart person, so tell me what kind of escort services do you provide?”

The lady was inches away from going insane.

She twisted and turned, struggling to escape Alex’s grip. Unfortunately, he held her down tight, and there was nothing she could do.

All her subordinates were stupefied.

Who was this man? How could he do it?

Terrifying!

The lady screamed, "Let me go, you jerk! Do you know who I am? If anything happens to me, be prepared to suffer the wrath of the ThousandMiles Conglomerate!"

“Thousand Miles Conglomerate?”

Alex was surprised. Did he come to their turf
by accident?

Zr0tA

His grip loosened.

Princess Fleur thought he was afraid. She rolled her eyes and smirked, "Scared? Let me go then!"

Alex snickered, "So what about the Thousand Miles Conglomerate, huh? I am still going to give you a piece of my mind!"

He sneered and gave her a good, hard slap.

At this conjecture, a middle-aged man came over hurriedly and said, "Ms. Fleur, Ms. Fleur, things are..."

He saw the scene unfolding in front of his eyes and was stunned.

After realizing who Alex was, he was even more surprised. "Mr. Rockefeller, I wasn't made aware that you came! Is this a

misunderstanding?”

The man was John Gates.

Zr0tA

Princess Fleur looked on in astonishment.

“You guys know each other?”

John nodded, “He is Lord Lex’s guest.”

“I did not know Father had a guest! And an idiot to boot!” Princess Fleur remarked sharply.

John remained silent.

CHAPTER 0055

He knew better. After all, Lord Lex Gunther revered Alex Rockefeller, a close friend's offspring, according to him. However, he had zero knowledge of Alex's actual identity.

"What's up? Why did you come?" asked Princess Fleur.

“My, I almost screwed things up. Lord Lex passed out suddenly.”

ZroTA

“What?!” Princess Fleur shrieked. “Go, we need to get to Hell’s Angels now!”

She dashed out, limping a little, and quickly got into her Lamborghini.

Following right behind her was Alex, who got into the passenger seat.

“Why are you here? Get off my car!” She was annoyed.

Alex sat unperturbed. "Start the engine; we are going to see your Father."

"What has it got to do with you?"

"You will know when we get there."

The Lamborghini sped away, leaving nothing but dust trails behind.

Half an hour later, they arrived at Hell's
Angels.

Zr0tA

As soon as the car was parked, Princess Fleur sprang out.

“Where is Father?”

“In the room by the backyard. Mr. Jakob is currently tending to him.”

Alex followed right behind. He was a visitor here before, and under LordLex’s orders to grant him free movement in and

out of Hell's Angels, he was not stopped nor questioned by anyone.

He saw Lord Lex and was shocked.

A man in his fifties, Lord Lex, was the epitome of a man with power, exuding dominance and authority wherever he went. Yet, he now looked like a man in his seventies instead, frail and weak, devoid of energy and liveliness.

It has only been a few days since they last saw each other but he now looked like a completely different person.

Something was off.

Zr0tA

Alex immediately understood why. It was all thanks to his Third Eye, an ability described in the Ultimate Book of Medicine that allowed the practitioner to identify every single issue within a human body, no matter the disease or the severity of it.

An evil being was currently latched onto Lord Lex's body.

Princess Fleur asked a man dressed in a

doctor's robe next to her, "Mr. Jakob, what is wrong with Father?"

Mr. Jakob knitted his eyebrows, looking disturbed. "He fainted out of the blue and lost his energy and spirit. I checked everything, but I have no idea what is going on."

"Shouldn't you send him to the hospital then?" demanded Princess Fleur.

“Don’t worry; I will take care of him. Please, leave the room,” said Alex.

Princess Fleur was livid. “Who the heck are you? This has nothing to do with you; get out!”

This wasn’t Mr. Jakob’s first encounter with Alex, as he was stationed here as Lord Lex’s personal doctor. He explained, “Lady Fleur, Mr.

Rockefeller here is Lord Lex's

Zr0tA

esteemed guest. Lord Lex instructed us to treat Mr. Rockefeller with the utmost respect and hospitality.”

Princess Fleur was mindblown. “What? How could I not know who he is? Anyway, Father is now unconscious, do you know how to treat him?”

“Yes, I do.” Alex nodded.

His affirmation cast a few doubts on all present in the room, especially Princess Fleur and Mr. Jakob.

Alex shook his head in resignation. They would have to see it with their own eyes to believe him.

“Well, if you refuse to leave, fine, I will tell you the truth. Lord Lex is the victim of a voodoo spell. Right now, a little demon is latched onto his body, sucking the life out

of him as we speak.”

“What?!”

“I beg your pardon?”

Zr0tA

How could they believe such a ridiculous explanation offered by Alex?

"I know you wouldn't believe me." Alex turned Lord Lex on his belly and tore his shirt open.

"Look!"

On Lord Lex's back were two little bloody footprints, while on his shoulders were

two little bloody handprints. They looked like marks made by a little child on his back.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0056 - 60

Princess Fleur looked bewildered. "Little demon? Where?!"

"Right in front of you, it's looking right into your eyes!" said Alex Rockefeller.

He was curious about why he did not freak

out since this was his first encounter with something like this. Perhaps, after acquiring the Ultimate Book of Medicine's wisdom, he gained the experience and knowledge of countless ancestors, as if he experienced it himself.

Princess Fleur indeed felt an unknown being stroking her face at the moment.

"Argh!"

She screamed and leaped onto Alex's back, clinging onto him as if her life depended on it.

Alex felt a soft sensation on his back and a pair of slender arms wrapped around his waist. For a short while, he thought of succumbing to the temptation.

“Lady, I am not your husband. Keep your hands off me.” Alex patted her on the back. Cheekily, it was the same spot where she was injured just previously.

Princess Fleur was embarrassed. After a moment of awkwardness, she hurriedly jumped down.

Once she moved away, Alex gave Lord Lex Gunther’s back a good, hard slap.

Reeeeeee!

A sound, unlike anything a person had ever heard, rang across the room. Princess Fleur shivered and was just about to jump onto Alex's back, only for him to push her away. He saw the little demon unlatch from Lord Lex's body and escape the room in a whiff of black smoke.

Alex quickly chased after it and saw it enter

a painting.

He got closer and immediately understood.

Waving his hand at Mr. Jakob, he asked,
“Do you know where this painting came
from?”

Mr. Jakob shook his head.

Princess Fleur, too, had never seen that painting before.

Lord Lex regained consciousness then and said, "This is a genuine artifact from centuries ago. It was gifted to me by a friend a few days ago. Why?"

"This painting right here is the problem. That

thing lives here.”

Lord Lex was a little confused until Princess Fleur explained everything. His expression darkened as he cursed, “Xavier Young! You are trying to kill me, aren’t you!”

Alex continued, “This painting is where the little demon lives. We cannot let it remain here. I will take it away with me and return it once everything is taken care of.”

Lord Lex looked at him wide-eyed.

He had no idea Alex was capable of doing things like this.

Zr0tA

Anyway, he wanted nothing to do with the painting and asked Alex to take it with him.

Alex nodded and looked around the room before resting his gaze on Princess Fleur.

"I want to borrow something from you."

"What is it?"

Alex grabbed onto the bottom of her dress and tore a big piece of fabric out of it.

Princess Fleur was stupefied. She did not expect the turn of events!

Alex, however, retrieved three red threads from the fabric.

He needed them.

Tying them into an unusual knot, he then secured it onto the painting. It was a method to lock a supernatural being down.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0057

Afterward, Lord Lex Gunther was talking to Alex Rockefeller, with nothing but surprise in his voice. "Just how did you do what you did then, sir?"

"I learned it from a wandering gypsy back when I was still in school. It's really nothing to be proud of, nothing to brag about."

Alex smiled.

Lord Lex added, "Sir, you are one-of-a-kind and truly destined to do great things in the future!"

"Oh gosh, stop with the flattering." Alex rolled his eyes.

"I was just telling the truth," replied Lord Lex.

As the conversation progressed, Princess Fleur's name was mentioned. She was also known as Waltz Fleur.

Zr0tA

Lord Lex had two adopted sons and a daughter. They were Azure Storm, Clay Ember, and Waltz Fleur, also known as Thousand Miles Conglomerate's main battle force in the underworld—the Three Great Chieftains and they all possessed incredible fighting prowess.

"I see."

"Sir, are you interested in Waltz? Should I send her your way?"

“No, no, hold on. I am at my wit’s end with my wife, I need a break. By the way, my mother woke up. We are living in Maple Villa now. Please contact me if you are faced with similar problems again.”

Lord Lex was thrilled. “Amazing, she is awake! Thank the Gods! Unfortunately, I will not be visiting as after all, I am not welcomed therewith my status.”

“You think my mother wants nothing to do with the underworld, that is why my father told her nothing about it?”

Lord Lex nodded. “It is a form of protection after all.”

Alex sighed. "You are not better off here too. Things are quite dangerous, please look out for yourself. If you need help, please let me know."

There was a glint in Lord Lex's eyes as he said, "I will, thank you so much!"

Alex took his leave then. He decided not to mention his dispute with Waltz.

They were acquaintances now, hence there was no way he could get paid for the settlement for his car.

Back at Hell's Angels.

"Father, who is that jerk? How come I know nothing about him?" Waltz complained.

Lord Lex frowned. "Show some respect for Mr. Rockefeller!"

“He had no respect for me! He hit me!” Waltz snorted in reply.

“Hold on, you are no match for him?” Lord Lex was surprised.

"I will defeat him when I see him again next time!" Waltz growled and promised.

Lord Lex was shocked and took quite a while to return to his senses.

'Just how enigmatic can Alex Rockefeller be?'

He wanted to reveal Alex's identity to Waltz but thought the better of it. After all,

the fewer the people who know, the better.

Alex returned to the pier in his wrecked M8. He stuttered to a halt in front of the car dealership.

The saleslady, who serviced Alex just a while ago, was Chloe Zea.

Seeing the pathetic state of the M8, she

covered her mouth in disbelief."Gosh! It has only been two hours! The car insurance is not ready yet, what can we do?"

Alex replied, "Do you have a similar car? Just replace it with mine."

“We do have one, but sir, this is not possible.” Chloe was put in a difficult spot. “What about the overhaul needed for your wrecked car?”

“What’s wrong with it? I don’t want this anymore and will buy another exact model of it.”

Chloe looked at her client wide-eyed and dumbfounded, obviously finding it hard to believe what she just heard.

CHAPTER 0058

Half an hour later, Alex Rockefeller arrived at Maple Villa in his new BMW M8.

The previous wreck was left behind at the dealership.

After some inspection, the staff found the main components of the car to be

functioning as intended. It was as good as new after some overhaul.

Upon Alex's departure, a small crowd quickly gathered around ChloeZea, with envy and jealousy plastered all over their faces.

“Chloe, you are so lucky today! That is at least a hundred thousand dollars in commission for you!”

“Where should I go to meet such a generous man?”

“You should keep in touch. He is such a young guy and a handsome one too! If you manage to entice him, your life is set!”

Chloe's eyes twinkled as she started fantasizing.

It was two o'clock in the afternoon.
California's West Hill Cemetery.

Also the worst cemetery in the state. Run-down and neglected.

Alex and his mother, Brittany Rockefeller, stood in front of a desolate tombstone.

The founder of the titular Rockefeller Group, with his net worth amounting to hundreds of billions of dollars before his death, could only be buried here in the most run-down and desolate spot.

ZrOUA

It was extremely difficult on Brittany.

Seconds in, she dropped to her knees and bawled her eyes out.

Alex cried silently and hugged his mother.

It took a while for her emotions to stabilize.

Gently plucking the weeds off the grave,

she lamented, "Why? Why was your father buried here? He loved having company more than anyone else when he was still alive. He is so lonely here."

"Didn't the Rockefeller family have their own cemetery? It was bought by your father when your grandmother passed away. Why wasn't he buried there?"

Alex sighed. "After the incident, John Rockefeller accused Dad of corrupt

practices and treason, selling sensitive research information to folks of other countries. The old man believed his accusation and banished us from the family. John also said that Dad did not deserve to be buried in the Rockefeller cemetery and colluded with a few of California's major burial grounds to reject Dad's ashes. This was the only place that accepted him."

He continued after a brief pause. "Do not worry, Mom, for I will avenge Dad. I will find out the truth and seek the one responsible for everything!"

Brittany's expression darkened.

Being an extremely capable woman, she knew how to control her emotions well as she said, "Alex, John Rockefeller is a nasty character with many devious tricks up his sleeves. We have to plan our actions

carefully.”

Alex nodded in acknowledgment even though he already knew what he needed to do.

Brittany continued, “John has perhaps misled your grandfather. Whatever happened, your father was his eldest son. The Rockefeller family’s wealth was the result of your father and my blood, sweat, and tears, and we meant to pass it

down to you. They do not deserve it. Our banishment is absurd. That being said, we need to see your grandfather.”

They needed to do that to know what they were dealing with.

“The old man lives in Assex Manor. It will be quite a feat to see him without any interruptions,” said Alex.

Brittany replied, "We need Uncle Cole's help. Only he can get your grandfather out of his house."

Uncle Cole was also known by his full name, Gavin Cole.

He was Bill Rockefeller's best buddy; after all, they had known each other since they were young.

It should not be a problem with Gavin's help.

That night, Alex and Brittany found themselves over at the Cole Residence, waiting for Bill's arrival.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0059

Bill Rockefeller had no prior knowledge of Alex and Brittany Rockefeller's presence.

He arrived at six in the evening.

Compared to a few days ago where he looked glum and morose after receiving a slap on the face from Lord Lex Gunther, Bill was a completely different man today. He was in high spirits and laughed as he entered the room. "Gavin! What's up with you? Really rare of you to invite me for a drink, eh!"

He then saw Alex standing at the side.

His smile faded from his face. "Traitor, what

are you doing here?"

Bill had the shock of his life the other day and pushed all blame onto Alex, seeing that he was still a good-for-nothing brat.

Alex looked straight ahead and remained silent.

Instead, Brittany spoke, "Father, Alex is still your grandson. How can you say

those things to him?”

“Ah! Brittany...You’re alive?”

Bill was startled.

Zr0tA

“Indeed, I am. You don’t seem too happy about this, though?”

Returning to his senses, Bill’s expression darkened as he snapped angrily, “The lot of you were banished a long time ago. You tramp! Don’t you dare call me father, for I am not yours anymore. I do not care if you die; it has nothing to do with me!”

Brittany still had her hopes up when she came, but now, they were all

shattered.

"I want to ask you this. Why? Why did you banish us? Rockefeller Group and Rockefeller Manor are both ours. If there should be anything, it should be you lot to be the ones who should leave."

"You sleazy fool! Both of you, mother and son, are nothing but dirt to me. Do not even fantasize about Rockefeller Group! Go about your miserable lives and leave us

alone!”

Gavin Cole interjected, wanting to defuse the situation.

However, Bill was unyielding. If Gavin insisted on speaking, they would no longer be friends.

Brittany tried to hold her rage in.

Shuddering, she spoke, “Father, I...”

“Do not call me, father. You do not exist in our family.” Bill cut her off coldly.

“Fine. Mr. Rockefeller, there are some things I would like to speak to you in private,” Brittany said through gritted teeth.

“Are you trying to bribe me? Say it now. I do not want to see you anymore after today!”

Brittany took a deep breath. "Fine, I will say it! Your eldest son, William, is innocent. It was all a conspiracy fabricated by John to frame him! The day before Alex's wedding, we found evidence of John defrauding money from the company and having close ties with the Japanese!"

"What a load of bullshit! You are the one framing him! Keep spewing nonsense, and I will smack the living hell out of you!" An

enraged Bill roared.

Brittany was even angrier. "You believe every single thing John says, but none of mine! Why are you so biased? William is your son too! We built Rockefeller Group from the ground up! How could you do this to us?! I have evidence!"

Bill was slightly taken aback at her remark but scoffed in return. "Evidence? You must have fabricated them too. I will

never believe you! Your family committed
treason and should have been imprisoned
for all you have done. If I hear any of this
circulating around, I will have you

Zr0tA

know that framing John is an offense I
take seriously. You will suffer mywrath!”

Zrota

Alex was at his limit hearing Bill vilifying his mother with obscene remarks.

He yelled in anger, "You old fool! Are you mentally challenged? If I hear another insult from you, I will knock you out with my bare fists!"

Bill was infuriated. He raised his hand on Alex.

CHAPTER 0060

Alex Rockefeller quickly intercepted and grabbed Bill by the hand mid-air.

He glared and sneered. "Old fool, enjoy the last days of standing up. Your happy days are numbered."

Earlier, he observed Bill Rockefeller

having a serious case of blocked arteries in his brain. It wouldn't be long before he would suffer a stroke and become bedridden.

To say Bill was mad was an understatement. He left in a rage.

Gavin Cole sighed, "I have no idea why he is in such a bad mood. You all are a family, aren't you? Don't worry, Brittany. I'll talk to him."

Brittany remained silent.

Brittany and Alex wanted to meet Bill to find out his sentiment, but the response was even worse than expected.

Bill did not take the death of William Rockefeller seriously. His attitude toward Brittany and Alex was atrocious. The truth did not matter. All he wanted was for them to leave the Rockefeller family, like trash being swept out of the house.

Zr0tA

It started drizzling when they left Cole Residence.

The autumn weather was slightly chilly.

“Mother, are you telling the truth when you said that you have evidence of John’s corrupt practices?” asked Alex after they got into their car.

Brittany shook her head. “It has been more than half a year. Even if they existed at one point, there is none left now. Plus, John is now legally Rockefeller Group’s owner. He

has access to large networks. Hence there is no way we can fight him head-on, given how weak we are. We have to bide our time.”

“That is a lot of work!” Alex remarked.

With the Thousand Miles Conglomerate behind his back, he needed at most a few days to destroy Rockefeller Group.

There were also specific tactics to be used to coerce members of the Rockefeller family.

However, this would definitely expose the ties between Thousand Miles Conglomerate and Alex.

That was unthinkable!

Mostly since Lord Lex Gunther was the

victim of the attempted murder, Alex knew he had to tread much more carefully.

“It is pretty manageable, to tell the truth.

Rockefeller Group was started by your

father and me years ago. Do you

remember the basis for our success and

growth?” asked Brittany.

After giving it some thought, Alex replied,
“The Bounty Acne Cream?”

Brittany nodded. “That’s right, Bounty
Acne Cream. Or more accurately, its
secret formula. Every other product
manufactured by Rockefeller Group is
designed as a complement to the
cream. Years ago, your father obtained
the secret formula by chance, which
spurred Rockefeller Group’s rapid
growth. Before the accident, we
managed to refine the current formula,

giving it better efficacy. I have the updated formula with me.”

Alex winked. “Which means that we could seize Rockefeller Group’s market share just by releasing improved products?”

“That’s right. Of course, there are a lot of details involved. I will get to it.”

Alex chose to remain silent as he listened.

His mother was once a capable businesswoman. She needed something to focus her attention on before she went insane, thinking about his deceased father everyday.

Bill returned home in a fury. Throwing a tantrum around, he smashed a beautiful set of jade teapots.

John Rockefeller hurriedly asked in
astonishment, "Father, what happened?"

Bill replied angrily, "It's Brittany, that
good-for-nothing woman. She is alive!
And came to interrogate me! I thought
you said she was never going to regain
consciousness?"

CHAPTER 0061 -70

John Rockefeller's heart leaped hearing the news.

But he soon calmed down. "So what if she wakes up? She is now a woman of infamy and has nothing to her name. She is no match for us."

Bill Rockefeller suddenly lowered his voice.

“John, Brittany said that she possessed evidence of your corrupt practices and also your ties with the Japanese. Do you think that’s going to be okay?”

John snickered. “Father, it happened more than half a year ago. Even if there is something fishy, any trace of it would have been gone by now.”

Bill breathed a sigh of relief. “Thank

goodness. Anyhow, Rockefeller Group can never fall into the hands of Alex, that bastard."

Alex would be disturbed by Bill's statement.

"Don't worry. It will never happen. Even till his death, William did not even have an inkling who he actually was. That fool! He would never have expected to toil his life away only for his efforts to be seized by others."

It was noon the next day at Assex Manor.

Lugging her suitcases along, Dorothy Assex returned home exhausted.

Upon entering the house, she overheard her mother, Claire, and her sister, Beatrice's conversation.

"Mother, do you know what happened?

Alex Rockefeller wanted me to call him

daddy all because he bought a new car! Do you think he is coming onto you?"

"What nonsense are you saying? Daddy? Why did he do that?"

"Beats me! I think he has gone insane. Perhaps he could not get the attention he wanted from sis and turned his attention toward you," said Beatrice.

“That jerk! He is now living with a woman named Coney. Hah, let’s see how long it will last! Where is Dorothy? She should divorce him as soon as possible!” said Claire with a hiss.

Dorothy was dumbfounded. Was her husband now living with another woman?

"Mother, what did you say?" She rushed in.

"You are back, my lady." Instead, a woman in her mid-forties came forward and greeted her with a broad smile on her face.

"Who are you?" Dorothy could not recognize the person.

"She is Ms. Brown, a housemaid I hired

recently," Claire answered. "Ms. Brown, do cook us something delicious. My daughter is home today; she wants to eat good food. If it is not up to my standard, I will deduct your salary."

Ms. Brown pouted but nodded and made a beeline for the kitchen.

"Why did you hire a housemaid?
Where is Alex?" Dorothy asked in
astonishment.

“That scoundrel was chased out of our house, and he will never return to the Assex Manor. Did you know he got together with a woman while you were away for business? She was a doctor, the granddaughter of California’s miracle doctor—James Coney. What a shameless man!”

Of course, Claire took a few liberties in her narrative, adding unfounded stories to support her cause further.

Beatrice assisted with plenty of interjections.

That was it. Dorothy was at her limits.

Claire continued, "Dorothy, isn't this a good thing? Since he is now living with that woman, you have all the reasons to divorce him! I have been waiting for this day for so long! Finally, we can say goodbye to his sorry ass!"

Dorothy's expression darkened. "I refuse to believe what you said. I am calling him; I want to hear it from him."

"What other doubts do you have? Do you know he slapped mother, all because of that woman?" added Beatrice.

Dorothy looked at her wide-eyed, trying to comprehend what she had just heard.

CHAPTER 0062

Brittany Rockefeller was unconscious and bedridden for more than six months, during which she could only be kept alive with IV fluids.

Zr0tA

Even as she regained consciousness, it would take time for her to recuperate and recover.

With that in mind, Alex Rockefeller wrote a prescription to hasten her recovery process.

However, he did not possess a medical license. As such, he was not allowed to obtain the various drugs needed from pharmacies and hospitals alike. Only Cheryl

Coney could help. Hence, he dialed her number.

Cheryl was at the hospital as they spoke and agreed to it immediately. Plus, she was also very fascinated by Alex's prescription.

Speeding along the streets in his M8, he arrived at the hospital in no time.

Cheryl was talking to a family member of a patient in her office. It was pleasing to see her speak in a gentle voice and carry herself so graciously.

Dorothy Assex, on the other hand.

It had been a long time since Alex felt any warmth from her. Neglect and apathy were daily occurrences, together with Beatrice and Claire Assex's hatred toward him. As such, he'd rather stay at the

hospital.

ZrótA

Of course, he did not resent Dorothy, for he played a big part in it.

While he was deep in thought, the patient's family left. Cheryl waved her hand in front of Alex's face and said, "Hey! What are you thinking about?"

"Ah!" Alex returned to his senses and said casually, "Nothing much; you look extremely gorgeous today; I got a little distracted."

Cheryl was taken aback by his witty remark and proceeded to kick him in the shins. "Such a sweet talker! Where is the prescription? Can I see it?"

Alex steadied his emotions and handed the prescription over to Cheryl.

Cheryl's abilities were still lacking behind her grandfather's. That being said, she

was not to be underestimated as she possessed at least sixty percent of James Coney's abilities.

However, she could not fathom the prescription. "What is this? I see many ingredients used to aid recovery. Although I do not think they are suitable for your mother since she just woke up. Did you obtain this from the internet? No, I cannot approve your prescription."

“It will work. Look, I’ve added a few ingredients to neutralize some of the more harmful effects of the drugs and to sustain their medicinal properties. With some acupuncture on the side, it should work fine...” said Alex convincingly.

After listening to Alex’s explanation, she gave it a thought before she decided to believe him. “Alright, I will give my approval.”

“Thank you, pretty Doctor Coney. I knew you are a good person!”

“Hold on, and I am not done yet!”

Cheryl rolled her eyes. “I want to observe how your mother is going to consume it.”

“Of course, feel free.”

“One more thing, can I ask you about the

Thirteen Acupuncture of Hell?”

“Go ahead.”

Alex started demonstrating the techniques
to Cheryl.

Zr01A

In order to achieve a better didactic effect, Alex showed Cheryl the acupuncture points on her body. The last needle was done on an acupuncture point roughly three inches above the chest. And just as he touched the spot with his finger, the office doors opened, with none other than Dorothy Assex standing on the other side.

She saw Alex's hand on Cheryl's body, who was not showing any signs of resistance.

She charged forward and swung her hand
across Alex's face.

Smack!

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0063

Slapped by Dorothy Assex, Alex Rockefeller looked at her in astonishment while Cheryl Coney exclaimed, "How could you hit him!"

Dorothy glared at the woman in the doctor's robe and said, "What's wrong with it, huh? We are still husband and wife, and you are nothing but a mistress!"

A nurse came by then, wanting to see Cheryl, and was quickly distracted by the drama unfolding before her eyes.

Zr0tA

All she could think of was Cheryl Coney, the granddaughter of California's Miracle Doctor and the hospital's star, being somebody else's mistress.

Alex frowned, seeing the nurse's presence. Hurriedly, he pulled Dorothy aside and said, "Stop talking nonsense. There is nothing between Doctor Coney and me!"

Dorothy violently shook her hand. "Get your hands off me! What were you doing, huh? I saw everything!"

The scene attracted the attention of a few more nurses.

Alex understood the danger if things were left to their own accord. Dragging Dorothy behind him, Alex leaped for the exit. "My apologies, Doctor Coney! I am counting on you for my mother! My wife must have

bought into my psychotic mother-in-law's nonsense. I am so sorry!"

Trying his best to keep Cheryl's innocence, he dragged Dorothy away until they came to a secluded stairwell.

He was just about to leave when she took the offense and bit him on his arm.

Overwhelmed by a massive wave of pain, Alex managed to suppress the force. Otherwise, Dorothy's teeth would have chipped off.

"Aren't you sorry?!" Dorothy screeched, tears welling up in her eyes.

Alex looked at her and smiled. "I'll be damned with that overreaction! You still care, don't you? What did your mother say? Was it something like, I was cheating

with Doctor

Coney, and we are currently living together?

Of course, your sister was thereto fan the

flames too! Don't think that I don't know

what they said. Do you believe me?"

Dorothy glared. "No."

"Oh no, I thought your mother says it every

day?"

“But... I saw it with my own eyes!”

Alex summoned his courage and gently embraced her. “You were mistaken. I was asking for advice on how some acupuncture techniques were to be used on mother.”

“You sure?”

“Why would I lie?”

“Well, I want you to come have lunch with me then.”

“Of course, the queen can never starve!
Let’s go. I know a good restaurant nearby.”

They got into Dorothy’s car with Alex in the driver’s seat. Once again, he summoned his

courage and gently grabbed her pale yet smooth hands. "Dorothy, you must be exhausted from your business trip. Let me take care of you from now on."

It was a little awkward for a couple who had not been so intimate with each other all this while.

Alex put his hand onto her shoulder and moved his head closer...

And the silence was broken by a ringing phone.

Dorothy jolted back to her senses, and hurriedly pushed him away. "All talk and no action is not the way. Why don't you accept the call first?"

“Cheryl Coney” was shown on the caller ID.

Seeing that, her demeanor instantly became chilly.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0064

Alex Rockefeller wanted to take the call outside of the car, but that would make him look guilty of any wrongdoing.

He explained, "It's Doctor Coney. I needed her help to prepare a prescription."

He should not have explained, as Dorothy Assex quickly added, "Are you going to go on speaker mode?"

"Why not?" replied Alex.

"Hello, Doctor Coney!" He greeted me after accepting the call and started to switch on the speaker mode.

Unexpectedly, Cheryl replied in a slightly flirtatious voice, "Why are you calling me Doctor Coney? Just call me Cheryl instead now that we are not in the hospital anymore."

Alex shivered.

He noticed a murderous aura emanating from Dorothy.

“Uhm, is there anything you want to talk to me about?”

“I just want to know... if you are okay?”

Alex replied, “Of course! Don’t worry.”

Cheryl smiled. “Your ex-wife is quite the character, isn’t she? I was a little frightened just now. So, how are things between you and her? I thought you were

divorced, so why is she still meddling in your affairs?"

That was the last straw on the camel's back as Dorothy erupted.

Zr0tA

She snatched the phone over and yelled,
“Listen here, I am not his ex-wife! We are
not divorced and never will! Give up! As a
doctor, aren't you embarrassed to be a
mistress and destroy marriages?”

Alex's worst fears came true.

He felt a storm brewing.

As the granddaughter of California's

miracle doctor, she was born with a silver spoon in her mouth. Growing up soft-spoken and well-tempered, Cheryl's upbringing did not stop her from lashing out as well. "Don't you know what kind of life Alex leads in your house? Since you cannot fulfill your duty as a wife, why are you keeping him to yourself? You are a selfish woman, and you do not deserve him!"

"And you do?" Dorothy was livid.

“Of course, a little better than you!” Cheryl retorted with an air of arrogance.

Alex was at his wit's end.

“Doctor Coney, please stop with your shenanigans! You are bringing nothing but trouble to me!”

Dorothy shouted at the phone, "Shameless!" and instantly terminated the call.

She glared at Alex and hurled the phone his way. "And you said there is nothing between you two? Tell me, what is this then?"

Alex hurriedly explained, "Dorothy, it is nothing like you imagined. She meant no harm; it was all Chloe's doing!"

“Are you going to leave me alone?”

Dorothy stared at him as if he were her prey.

“Okay, I will leave.”

Alex scrambled out of the car.

Dorothy shifted to the driver’s seat and

slammed her foot on the accelerator. The car sped off, leaving a trail of smoke and dust behind.

Zr0tA

On the other side, Cheryl regretted everything she said over the phone. That was the stupidest move she could ever make!

'What if Alex thinks I have a crush on him?'

A while later, Alex called.

Steadying her breathing, she accepted the call.

Alex mentioned nothing about what had happened, only about the prescription.

Cheryl said, "The prescription is ready. Although there is one ingredient I cannot get hold of, the wild ginseng. We do not have it here in the hospital, nor over at Ganoderma. Either you figure out a way yourself, or we switch it to regular ginseng."

Alex shook his head. "That cannot do. This is the main ingredient for my prescription. I will think of a way to get it. No worries, thank you so much, Doctor Coney."

"Did I trouble you just now?" Cheryl asked carefully.

“You did. I was so close to getting a lady into my bed. Now that the lady is gone, you need to look for one for me,” answered Alex.

“You...I am not talking to you, pervert.”

Beep. Beep.

The call ended.

Alex looked at the sky and let out a deep
sigh.

ZrotA

CHAPTER 0065

An hour later at the Assex Manor.

Dorothy Assex returned with a miserable expression.

Seeing that, Claire Assex was pleased and said smugly, "I told you, right? The county courthouse opens at nine in the morning

tomorrow. We are going to file your
divorce
immediately.”

Zr0tA

"Nobody is getting a divorce here," Dorothy said coldly.

Claire immediately jumped on her two feet. "Dorothy, just how smitten are you? What is so good about him? Even after what he did to you? Look, I know Spark Rockefeller likes you. Let me talk to him tomorrow."

"Mother, what is wrong with you? Did you forget what that jerk did to me?"

“At least he is better than Alex! He cheated on you!” replied Claire.

Dorothy stormed upstairs without saying anything else, and she was not in the mood to have dinner.

It was seven o'clock at night when Dorothy received a phone call from Shermaine Ford. “Lady Assex, headquarters called

saying that an important meeting will be held tomorrow at nine at our company. The board of directors is sending three of them over, and the entire upper management of the company is required to attend. It will be held at Conference Room No. 3 in Tower 2.”

“Understood, thank you.”

After ending the call, Dorothy rubbed her temples in irritation.

'Grandmother must be pissed. I am not getting out of this safely. I wonder what will happen tomorrow.'

It was nine o'clock, but Alex was still out.

He was nowhere to be seen even as the clock struck eleven.

Was he with the female doctor from this morning? The more she thought about it,

the worse she felt.

“Where are you?” She dialed his number.

“At home!” answered Alex.

“Hah, what a joke. You mean, the doctor’s home?”

“Yeah, right. Didn’t I tell you already that

there is nothing between us? I am in my own
house taking care of Mother."

Zr0tA

"Hold on. Mother is awake?"

"She is. There is no other reason for her to stay at the hospital, hence why we decided to return home."

"Why didn't you tell me about it?" demanded Dorothy.

Alex replied, "You gave me the boot before I could say anything."

Dorothy was speechless. Why did he hide such important news from her, his own wife?

"Send me your address. I am visiting Mother tomorrow."

"Will do."

Alex was thrilled hearing Dorothy

addressing Brittany as 'Mother' instead of 'your mother.' It was a good start.

Zr0tA

The next day, Dorothy arrived at the conference room just as the clock struck nine. To her surprise, it was empty.

Calling out to an employee nearby, she asked, "Isn't there supposed to be a meeting here? Where are the people?"

"Oh, Lady Assex, I think it is going on at Conference Room No. 1 over at Tower 1."

“What?!”

Dorothy rushed over, calling Shermaine multiple times on her way there. However, her call was not picked up.

Something was clearly off.

The meeting had been going on for more than half an hour when she arrived.

Anderson Assex was the host of the meeting. He reprimanded Dorothy when she entered. "Dorothy Assex, how can you be late? As the GM of this branch, your tardiness reflects your incapacibilities and weakness. Clearly, you are not fit to run the company!"

Dorothy was shocked. She saw Shermaine among the attendees and asked, "Shermaine, what is going on? I thought you told me it was going to be held at Conference Room No.3 over at Tower 2 at nine in the morning?"

"No, I said eight-thirty at Conference Room No.1 here at Tower 1." Shermaine shook her head.

And she hurriedly shifted her gaze to her

feet.

Emma Assex could be heard snickering.

The sight of those was all Dorothy needed to know.

CHAPTER 0066

Shermaine Ford betrayed her.

Dorothy Assex was infuriated. After all, she guided Shermaine to where she was today. From giving her an opportunity right after high school to entrust her with managerial roles and repay her loans, she was an immense help throughout it all.

At the end of the day, Shermaine chose to side with Emma Assex and played a nasty trick on Dorothy, embarrassing herself in an important meeting.

A true traitor.

Zr0tA

Emma, who was Anderson's daughter and the rumored person to replace Dorothy as the new general manager, looked at Dorothy with a smirk on her face. "Lady Assex, I believe your secretary gave you

the right information. I think you overslept. Alas, that abandoned son of Rockefeller brought us a massive contract in exchange for a favor, but you had to mess it up. I know you were upset and chose to make up for it in the bedroom. However, please do not get caught up in your own desire. You have a company to run."

Dorothy's expression was as frosty as the winds of winter. "Emma Assex, quit with your nonsense! You are not a member of the

board of directors northis company. Please
leave.”

Wham!

Anderson slammed the table with his palm
and pointed his finger at Dorothy. He
roared, “You are the one leaving this room.
From now onwards, you are not the
general manager anymore. Emma will be
taking your place.”

Emma stood up and nodded at the crowd in the conference room. With a smile on her face, she said, "I am Emma Assex. It is my pleasure to be of service to the company."

Zr0tA

She then looked at Dorothy mockingly.

Anderson clapped, followed by the directors.

The company's upper management looked at each other in much confusion but started clapping after initiating applause.

Dorothy grimaced. "Uncle, I am the general manager here. It is not something

you can decide on.”

“I knew you would say that. This is the document initiating the leadership change from the headquarters. The board of directors signed off on it. Read it with your own eyes,” said Anderson.

He hurled a clipboard into Dorothy’s way.

A paper was attached to it and it was the

document from the headquarters.

Dorothy's heart was shredded to pieces as she read it. Sadness, anger, and disappointment were insufficient to describe how she felt at the moment.

She put in tremendous effort, building the company with her very own blood, sweat, and tears from the ground up.

And what did she get at the end? Nothing.

She clenched her teeth as she endured the mocking stares from the crowd.

Anderson snorted and looked at his daughter with a smile. "I hereby announce Emma Assex as the new general manager of Assex Constructions' branch here in City South. Please give her a round of applause and welcome her to the team!"

Everyone stood up and applauded while congratulating Emma.

Only Dorothy stood motionless in the shadows.

Emma sneered at Dorothy before clapping her hands together and said, "Please have a seat. Thank you. I want to announce a decision made by the company. Starting from this month, all employees' wages will

be increased by thirty percent, an appreciation for all the hard work and effort put in for the company.”

Most of the time, spending sufficient money to please people was a tried and trusted method, and this time, it was no exception.

The employees roared and cheered happily.

She continued, "Also, I hereby announce Shermaine Ford as the first secretary to the GM. Your compensation will be adjusted accordingly. From now onwards, you are my private secretary."

"Thank you so much, Lady Assex! I will do my best!" Shermaine smiled.

Dorothy threw a filthy glance at Shermaine and snorted.

The biggest impostor of the year had to be her!

Emma stole a glance at Dorothy and said, "The thirty percent wage increase does not apply to Dorothy Assex as it is only for the upper management.

You are transferred to the customer service department with a starting wage of three thousand dollars. We hope you will do your best for the company. Now, please leave, as you are not allowed in here."

"Cut the act, I quit!" Dorothy snapped coldly.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0067

She then left.

Zr0tA

Not long after, an email titled "Dorothy Assex dismissed due to incapability, to be replaced by Emma Assex" was blasted out to every employee's email address.

Many felt the unjust treatment dished out to Dorothy. Especially the ones who worked alongside Dorothy when she started and knew just how much effort she put into the company.

Yet...

When Dorothy left with her personal belongings, nobody came to say goodbye.

Everyone lowered their heads as if she did not exist.

When she stepped out of the office, tears welled up in her eyes.

Shermaine Ford was waiting at the exit.

"I treated you as best as I could, why did you betray me?" demanded Dorothy in disbelief.

Zr0tA

Shermaine smiled coldly. "I chose to side with the better party. You cannot blame me for the fault lies on you, for being such a weak and insignificant member of the Assex family."

"I hope you will not regret your actions."

Dorothy nodded.

"Of course not, good riddance!" Shermaine turned and walked away, swaying her hips in a prideful manner.

Over at the headquarters of Assex
Constructions.

The CEO's secretary, a pretty lady herself,
hurriedly knocked on the CEO's door. She
said to Benny Assex, "CEO, bad news. We
just got news from the marketing
department that Waylon Realty will not
extend our contract."

“What did you say?”

Benny Assex was Madame Joanne’s eldest son. He immediately jumped to his feet after hearing the news.

Waylon Realty was California’s largest real estate company. Recently, they managed to purchase four massive lots of land at City North, with a total area of over a million

square feet. It involved the development of residential areas, commercial buildings, business lots, and multipurpose towers, all to establish City North as California's newest landmark.

The number of construction materials required to make it happen was astronomical.

So the saying went, a contract to supply construction materials to Wayton Realty

was every construction businesses' dream here in California.

However, it was also common

knowledge that the Assex

Conglomerate had been dealing with

Waylon Realty for a

long time. There was nothing else the others could do.

This meant that nobody else had doubts about Assex Constructions taking over this particular project.

To prepare for this particular partnership, Assex Constructions made plenty of arrangements, such as purchasing their raw materials in massive quantities ahead of time.

However, with the contract terminated, the capital spent was down the drains.

With that came cash flow issues and the Assex Conglomerate would have to be dissolved within three months since they could not pay their loans.

That was why Benny was in a huge shock.

Zr0tA

“Arrange a meeting with Waylon Realty’s CEO, Mr. Carter immediately. I need to see him personally!”

“But CEO, you have a meeting coming up, you cannot miss that too!”

“What should we do? Call Anderson Assex and inform him to attend to the matter immediately!”

Anderson received the call but was not at all worried. He was planning to send his daughter, Emma Assex over as the representative of Assex Constructions. If she could salvage the contract, it would mean a huge boost to her status in the family.

Zr0tA

Riding in his brand new M8, Alex Rockefeller was waiting for Dorothy outside of Assex Construction's City South branch office. He was to bring Dorothy over to visit Brittany Rockefeller.

“Is this a BMW M8?” Dorothy was surprised to see Alex’s ride.

“Get in the car!” Alex smiled.

She was even more surprised to find a little girl in the rear seat of his car.

"Who is this kid?" asked Dorothy.

"A child of my neighbor. Her name is Zoey
Carter and her father happensto be
Charles Carter. Do you know him?"

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0068

“What? Do you mean she’s daughter of Charles Carter, the CEO of Waylon Realty?”

Dorothy ran a construction materials business and 70% of the Assex family’s income came from Waylon Realty. Hence, there was no way that she did not know Charles.

However, Charles never heard about her.

At the moment, feeling shocked, she was bereft of speech and could only stare blankly at Zoey Carter.

As Zoey looked back at Dorothy, she asked softly, "Are you Uncle Rockefeller's wife? Haven't you both already divorced?"

Again, Dorothy was in daze. "How did she... Hi, Zoey, I'm Dorothy Assex. You can address me as Auntie Dorothy. By the way, we haven't divorced."

Immediately, Zoey pursed her lips and let out a sigh. "Sigh, why didn't you divorce? In that case, I can't marry Uncle Rockefeller. It's annoying!"

Dorothy's eyes widened with a complete shock.

Alex quickly explained, "She's still a kid, Dorothy. She knows nothing about divorce, so just don't take it personally."

Zoey argued loudly, "What makes you think I don't know? I know we can sleep together after getting married. My friend in kindergarten, Melvin, always thinks about marrying me but I don't want to because he will pee his pants and I'm worried that he will make my dress wet!"

“Uhhmm.”

Children’s words carried no harm.

However, it was interesting, so Alex and Dorothy burst into laughter.

A moment after departure, Dorothy received a call from Claire.

Claire panicked like a cat on a hot tin roof after learning that her daughter got fired. That also meant the three of them – mother and daughters – no longer had any income, so how were they going to sustain themselves?

“I’ve heard that you got fired, Dorothy, isn’t it? Don’t get me worried, please.”

Alex clearly heard Claire’s voice from the phone.

He looked at Dorothy with surprise and heard she answered desolately, "Yes."

The next second, Claire screamed loudly as though someone had stepped on her toes. "Gosh! It's true! What now? What should we do? We have no money for food, and we're going to live on air! Don't tell me that we're gonna beg for food? It's all that bad Alex's fault! That trash is incapable of doing anything but only creating problems!

If it weren't for him playing dumb in the Assex family, would you get fired? Would our family be in such a dire situation now?"

Dorothy replied as she glimpsed at Alex, "Mom, this has nothing to do with Alex. I have something else, let's call it a day."

"What's it? What else is more important than the loss of family income? Come home now and we have to figure this out. Perhaps, we can seek help from Spark, we'll

be fine if he's willing to help us."

Zr0tA

Alex was speechless as he heard her words. He could not believe that his mother-in-law was so realistic to that extent.

Dorothy said, "Mom, I really have to go, bye."

She switched off her phone as soon as she put down the call.

However, Alex's phone rang soon after.

Dorothy said, "Don't answer!"

Alex switched it to silent mode and said,
"I'm not that stupid. She will definitely
lecture me if I answer."

He then placed his hand on her lap and
continued, "Don't worry, I'll support
you financially as I made you lose your
job."

Zoey, who was in the rear seat,
screamed, "Oh gosh! It's blinding me!
My eyes! My eyes!"

Zr0tA

Alex asked helplessly, "What did your teacher teach you in the kindergarten, Zoey? Your teacher set a bad example for you.."

While resting her chin in her hands, Zoey answered, "Sigh, our teacher knows nothing!"

This child was impressive!

Along the journey, Dorothy insisted on

getting some gifts and they filled up half of the car boot as though she only had the gut to see Brittany with those gifts.

They finally arrived at Maple Villa.

Dorothy tried very hard to suppress her curiosity as she followed Alex and entered the villa. At first glance, the villa was a few times superior than what her family owned, with a bigger area and more luxurious furnishing. There was even an

indoor swimming pool!

Gosh!

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0069

Zr0tA

Then, she saw Brittany standing there lively with a couple beside her. She saw the photo of the man before—it was Charles Carter. The lady with a beautiful look, needless to say, was Charles' wife, Hailey Lawson.

At the moment, Charles and Hailey were helping out Brittany in the kitchen.

Witnessing such a scene, Dorothy's jaw almost dropped.

"Mom! You, you've recovered! That's great!"

Dorothy said.

"Dorothy." Brittany smiled. "Awww, that's kind so kind of you bringing somany gifts, you don't have to do that."

Brittany had a differing opinion about Dorothy as she heard that her son lived as though a slave in the Assex family and

even got humiliated by his mother-in-law. How could she not be angry when that was her one and only son? However, Alex had been strongly speaking well of Dorothy in front of her. He claimed that those were just rumors and he was the incapable one who failed to live up to expectations. Brittany decided to let it go, especially after hearing that Dorothy stabbed her own chest in order to secure their marriage.

"Hey, Alex! Come and lend me a hand while

I'm cooking." Hailey took Alex away with a smile and let Zoey to play with her father.

Zr0tA

Dorothy blinked her eyes, stunned and shocked with disbelief.

How could Alex be so close to the Carters?

She never heard that they had any connection!

Meanwhile, Emma ambitiously arrived at Waylon Realty with her secretary, Shermaine Ford.

Emma said, "Shermaine, I brought you here because I trust your capability. Don't you ever screw up. When the time comes, you will have to sacrifice yourself even if you have to sleep with someone. After the deal is sealed, I'll reward you with two millions dollars and we will be best friends."

While gritting her teeth, Shermaine said with a nod, "Alright!"

However, after arriving at the entrance of Waylon Realty, the security guard kicked the two of them out as soon as he heard they were from AssexConstructions. "Get the hell out of here. Waylon Realty doesn't welcome you."

Emma immediately hinted at Shermaine with her eyes.

Shermaine got the message. Hence, after pulling down her collar a little and exposing her fair skins, she took a step forward and said, "Hey, sweetheart. I think there must be some misunderstanding. We are from Assex Constructions, and have a close working relationship with Waylon Realty."

As she spoke, she drew closer and rubbed the guard's chest with her hand!

Smack!

Feeling shocked by her action, the guard then slapped Shermaine across her face without hesitation.

She was stunned by the sudden slap.

"F*ck you, b*tch! My wife is working here, how dare you harass me!? Do you think I wouldn't beat the sh*t out of you? Get out of here now! Don't ever think that you

guys

from Assex Constructions will be allowed to enter. This is an order! Are you two deaf?"

"Get out!"

While the two of them were getting shoved and chased out of the building by the guard, Emma writhed in pain as she sprained her ankle in high heels.

Shermaine said while covering her face, "GM, it seems that Assex Constructions has been blacklisted. Is there a conflict with Waylon Realty? Otherwise, they wouldn't treat us this way."

At this moment, Emma received a call from her father, Anderson. "I just got this news, Emma. Charles is not in the office today but at Maple Villa. Be there as soon as possible and get the deal. Your granny is now aware of this matter and told the young ones in the Assex family that whoever manages to

seal the deal with Waylon Realty, will be rewarded with 10% of the shares from Assex Constructions and become the next general manager. You have to seize this opportunity at all costs as Jonathan, Charlotte and Bernadette are aggressively fighting for it as well."

After hearing the news, Emma burst with excitement all of a sudden.

Ignoring the intense pain of her ankle, she

said, "Let's go to Maple Villa now, Shermaine. Failure will not be tolerated this time. I'll reward you with ten million dollars if we get the deal, otherwise, you're fired!"

However, as they arrived at the entrance of Maple Villa, they were still blocked by the guard, leaving them no way to go in.

Therefore, Emma lied and claimed that it was a matter of life and death and she must see Charles as soon as possible.

The security guard was helpful, hence, he hurriedly gave a call to Charles.

Zr0tA

"Hi, Mr. Carter, a woman named Emma Assex has something urgent to see you..."

Before he managed to finish his sentence, his phone was snatched by Emma. "Hi, Mr. Carter, this is Emma from Assex Constructions. Can you give me five minutes for an important discussion?"

On the other side, Charles, Alex, and a few ladies had already seated for dinner.

After taking a glimpse at Dorothy, Charles said to the phone, "A moment, please."

He then excused himself while pulling Alex aside.

"Hey, bro. Just to give you a heads up. Do you remember that I've terminated the collaboration with Assex Constructions out of anger when you were kicked out of the Assex family and got humiliated by

your mother-in-law earlier? Emma Assex is just outside the villa now. She must be here for this matter. Do you think we should let her in?"

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0070

Charles would definitely reject her if it was the time before he met Dorothy.

Zr0tA

However, now that Alex and Dorothy decided not to divorce after reconciliation, so Charles could only think of seeking Alex's opinion.

When Alex heard that, he was a little shocked as he did not expect that Charles would do that for him.

However, he shook his head as soon as he heard the name "Emma Assex". "Just a while ago, my wife has just got fired by

Assex Constructions and the one who replaces her seems to be Emma Assex.”

“What?”

Charles was shocked. Never did he believe that Dorothy would be fired by Assex Constructions despite she was a member of the Assex family.

Alex smiled awkwardly. “It’s my fault.

Now Dorothy has to suffer forme
because I offended Madame Joanne a
few days ago.”

At this moment, Alex’s phone rang and the
name “Beatrice Assex” appeared on the
screen.

After pondering for a while, he decided to
answer the call.

However, Claire's voice was heard. "Hey, Alex, is Dorothy with you?"

"Anything urgent? Otherwise, I have to hang up."

"Wait, wait! Let me tell you something urgent. Since Dorothy got fired, Madame Joanne has given her word. Now that the agreement between Assex Constructions and Waylon Realty has expired, hence whoever junior from the Assex family

manages to seal the new deal with Waylon Realty will be the next general manager of Assex Constructions and acquire 10% of the company shares. You must inform Dorothy and urge her to seize this opportunity. Otherwise, our family will be finished. You're also finished, and so does your mom. Do you get it?"

Her voice was very loud to the extent that Charles could hear it.

As a strange smile appeared on his face, he said, "The quality of the construction materials from Assex Constructions are relatively good. I actually have an idea..."

A moment later.

Zr0tA

Emma heard Charles' voice. "Okay, come in. I'm at No. 8 Villa."

Emma was very excited as she heard that.

A good start was equivalent to halfway mark on the road of success.

Shermaine was also very excited as if the ten million dollars were already waving their hands at her. She even thought about how she could spend those ten million dollars and had psychologically prepared to seduce Charles... She even wondered if she really managed to hook up with Mr. Carter, would it not be a decent luck?

It seemed that it was really a fortunate year for her. She was glad that she picked the right alliance, otherwise, she would not be so lucky now if she sided with Dorothy.

Therefore, they entered No. 8 Villa.

Both Emma and Shermaine's eyes almost popped out of their heads as they saw Dorothy and Alex were having dinner with Charles' family.

“How is this possible? This isn’t real.”

Both of them desperately winked their eyes but they definitely did not see them wrongly. They were indeed Dorothy and Alex. However, they did not know Brittany.

Dorothy was shocked as well, as she did not expect Emma’s arrival.

Charles said, "Emma, is it? We are having family dinner. You only have five minutes. Tell me, what is it about?"

Emma regained her composure after a while.

Perhaps she had limited capability, hence, she got nervous when encountering such an unexpected situation. While stuttering, she said, "Car... Mr. Carter, yes. I'm the general manager of Assex Constructions' subsidiary company in City South..."

Charles interrupted. "Straight to the point, please."

Emma said after swallowing some saliva, "I'd... I'd like to invite Mr. Carter to renew the contract with Assex Constructions. I'll try my best to fulfill any terms and conditions as per your request."

Shermaine knew it was going to be difficult

when Emma said that.

“Haha!” Hailey let out a sardonic laugh.

“Any terms and conditions? Does that include sleeping with someone else?”

Emma quickly explained, “No, no, I don’t mean that. I mean, I’ll try my best to fulfill the commercial terms and conditions.”

Charles asked with a smile as he looked at Dorothy, "What do you think, sis-in-law?"

As soon as she heard what Charles addressed Dorothy, Shermaine's facial expression changed instantly as if her heart was being stabbed. Just a while ago, she even provoked Dorothy that she was talented enough to pick a beneficial alliance. However, did it not seem that she had picked the wrong alliance now?

How could Dorothy become Charles' sister-in-law?

Dorothy answered with derision,
"Charles, I think I'm not going to give my
opinion on this matter since I'm no
longer an employee of Assex
Constructions."

CHAPTER 0071 - 80

Charles nodded and waved at Emma and Shermaine. "I think Assex Constructions is not suitable for Waylon Realty, both of you can leave now."

Emma said, "Ain't you gonna say something, Dorothy? Even though you're no longer an employee of Assex Constructions, you're still part of the

Assexes. Help me, I'll pay you ten million dollars if we get the deal."

Dorothy lowered her head and continued with her meal. She was too lazy to even look at her due to the worrying intelligence of that woman.

Charles chided, "Get out of here! Do you think you can just get anything from Waylon Realty solely with your connection?"

Both women were kicked out of the villa.

The door banged shut behind them.

Emma was extremely pissed off and her eyes were filled with malice.

Shermaine had a gloomy yet regretful expression on her face. If Dorothy had Charles to back her up, she would not have to worry about losing her position as a general manager. However, Shermaine herself would certainly lose her job if Charles refused to renew the contract with Assex Constructions.

She thought about her newly bought property and the huge sum of loan. She would not be able to pay for the installments if she lost her job.

At the moment, her legs gave away due to the extreme anxiety.

...

Zr0tA

In Assex Manor, Madame Joanne was anxiously sitting on her usual elevated seat while the descendants of the Assexes were sitting there in fear and trepidation.

They all knew that once they lost the collaboration contract with Waylon Realty, the Assexes would be finished and they would face bankruptcy three months later.

“What should we do now? We have spent so much and even borrowed a big amount of bank loans! Who’s the idiot who decided to bulk purchase the materials in advance?!”

“I think it’s better to sell off the materials at a cheaper price now to cut loss.”

Zr0tA

“That’s a big hassle and the value of Assexes’ assets would be reduced by half. Besides that, who can afford to buy so many stocks in California?”

Suddenly, Emma came in.

Anderson quickly took a few steps forward. “Hey girl, how was it? Did you manage to see Mr. Carter?”

Emma nodded. "Yes, I did."

The Assexes were instantly delighted and came closer.

"How was it? Did you get the contract?" Old Madame Assex asked nervously.

Emma shook her head. "No."

Everyone at the scene immediately looked disappointed.

Zr0tA

Emma continued and said, "It's all because of that b*tch, Dorothy Assex! Waylon Realty refused to sign with Assex Constructions because of her doings. She threw a monkey wrench in the works so that Mr. Carter wouldn't sign the contract with us."

"What? Dorothy? Why would she do that?"

"Because she got fired, so she messed this up out of anger."

“Does Dorothy have this capability?”

Anderson doubted.

Emma continued angrily, “Do you know what I saw when I met Mr. Carter? Dorothy and her trashy husband visited Mr. Carter and were having dinner with his family! He even asked Dorothy’s opinion. He would sign the contract if she agreed, but she refused to!”

Smack!

Anderson hit hard on the table. "This is absurd! This b*tch really deserves to die! Mom, I suggest kicking Dorothy, Beatrice, and Claire out of the family and never allow them to return!"

Madame Joanne remained expressionless. "And then? We are all doomed together, waiting for bankruptcy?"

The rest of the Assexes were left speechless.

“Huh...”

Madame Joanne said coldly, “Indeed, Dorothy deserves to die, but we can’t kick them out of the family now. In contrast, we have to persuade her nicely! You’re the one who decided to fire her and your daughter is the one who replaced her position. Later, both of you should bow your head and apologize to her, and return the position of general manager to her.”

“What?!”

Emma was shocked with disbelief as she could not accept it.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0072

After the dinner, Alex and Dorothy left Maple Villa as Alex had to help Brittany to get an over hundred-year-old ginseng.

Along the journey, Dorothy behaved like a curious baby.

“How do you know Charles?”

Zr0tA

"How come you are staying at Maple Villa?"

"Both of you seem to be extraordinarily close!"

"And, what about this car..."

Alex asked with a smile, "I honestly have no idea how to answer you as you threw so many questions to me in one go. In fact, it was because of Zoey."

When Zoey was eating mountain hawthorn and it got stuck in her throat, I was just there to help and take it out."

Dorothy asked with a frown, "Is that it? And he gave you such a big villa in return?"

Alex said, "Uhhh... we are just staying temporarily. He knew that we had no accommodation when I was kicked out by your mom, hence, so he asked us to move in."

There was nothing wrong with his words.
After all, his name was not registered on
the property deed.

Dorothy said, "It doesn't seem to be
appropriate. Why don't you move back with
Mom?"

Alex quickly shook his head. "Your mom will kill me if I go back. Besides that, my mom is not a congenial person and both of them would end up fighting. Just leave it as it is. I'll figure something out. What about you? Do you want to move here?"

"Where do I sleep?"

"My room."

“Go away.”

She paused for a second as she thought that her words seemed somewhat unreasonable. Just like what Cheryl said, since she could not bear the responsibility of being a wife, what qualification did she have to hold back and refuse to divorce? Thus, she then said, “Give me some time. I’m not ready yet.”

Alex said, “It’s fine. I’m already used to it.”

His reply made Dorothy even more depressed. She wondered if they should just look for spare time and settle the matter someday!

In fact, it was quite challenging to find the hundred-year-old wild ginseng.

After checking with a few pharmacies, Alex could not find it. Even if some sellers claimed that they had the hundred-year-old ginseng, but after they were shown, only did he realize they were just a hoax. It would be great if the ginseng were at least fifty years old.

Zr0tA

At this time, Alex's phone rang.

He took a look and saw Claire's name on the screen again.

Alex said, "I think it's better for you to switch on your phone. Otherwise, your mom will be calling me all day and you know I'll get a headache whenever I hear her voice."

Zr0tA

"You endured it for the past six months though."

"I couldn't give up on you."

With that, he finally answered the call after
Dorothy glared at him.

"Yes, Mom!"

Zr0tA

"Get Dorothy to answer the call."

"She's not here..."

"Stop fooling me, Emma saw both of you had dinner together and she's now at my place with her father. Hurry and get her to come home. We have something urgent to discuss."

Claire hung up the call as soon as she

finished talking.

Alex said with a smile, "Anderson and Emma are at your place now."

Dorothy said, "Uncle Anderson has never paid a visit to my house as he thought that bad luck would fall on him if he ever comes over. Why are they at my house now?"

Alex said, "Do you still not see it? They

certainly came over to apologize! Assex
Constructions will be badly impacted if
they lose the deal with Waylon Realty.
Hence, Madame Joanne was driven to act
desperately by offering the position of
general manager and 10% of the company
shares.

Zr0tA

Emma must have gone back and
complained to Madame Joanne about you
since she failed to get Charles' greenlight
and saw you having dinner with him.
However, Madame

Joanne is too smart. She knows your words might get through Charles from your interaction, so she must have wanted your help to get the deal by forcing the father and daughter to apologize to you."

Dorothy said in surprise, "But, what good would it do? It's such a big contract. Is Charles going to change his mind just because of me?"

CHAPTER 0073

Alex smiled and said, "Be patient, I'll definitely help you get 10% of the company shares and the position of general manager."

Dorothy said with her eyes sparkling, "I don't need those things. I only need to get back the subsidiary company in City South."

"Sure!"

Seeing Alex being endowed with intellect and confidence in handling matters, the gloominess that had lingered inside Dorothy for about half a year started to dissipate a little.

She concluded that it was because Brittany finally woke up from her coma.

Swiftly, they arrived at Assex Manor.

However, they seemed to have judged wrongly.

Anderson and Emma did not come to beg for a genuine apology. As Dorothy and Alex arrived at the entrance, they could hear Anderson's arrogant voice. "Hey Claire, you should be aware that since Henry's death, you and your daughters have been able to live a comfortable life

in such a villa with a housekeeper, it's all because of generosity by the Assexes."

"But, what has Dorothy done? She ruined the family business and do you think that's ethical?"

"You now have only one choice: get your daughter to help Emma to get the contract signed. Otherwise, all of you will be kicked out of the Assexes and this villa will be taken back! You all can stay under the bridge!"

Claire's face immediately turned pale and her legs were numb as she thought about the consequences.

At this moment, Alex and Dorothy entered the house.

“Wow, Anderson, you sure really are majestic enough to show off your power at my house. Who do you think you are?! Get out of my sight and leave as far as possible!” Alex said with an icy tone.

Furiously, Anderson cursed as he glared at Alex, “Do you think an abandoned child from the Rockefellers and a useless person who lives off a woman like you would be even qualified to talk to me? Kneel before me and apologize now for being rude to me! What now? Look at you, are you gonna

hit me? Come on!"

Alex said with a cold gaze, "As you wish."

Smack!

Zr0tA

Alex slapped Anderson across his face.

Anderson slumped on the floor and half of his face was swollen.

“Gosh! Dad!”

Emma was extremely shocked and glared at Alex with her eyes widened. “Scoundrel! How dare you hit my dad?”

Smack!

Alex did not say anything, but soon after,
another slap landed on Emma's face.

"Not only I have the courage to slap your
dad, but I can slap you as well! What now?"

"Do you think I'm easy to be bullied after
losing the favor of Lord Lex Gunther? In
fact, all of you are just trash in my eyes!

Frankly, I don't mind ruining the Assexes and expelling you all out of California if you continue being so unreasonable and disrespectful to my wife! Before that, I also don't mind making the two of you vanish from this world."

Claire was initially happy but she started to feel worried after a short while. What was so good about her idiotic son-in-law slapping Anderson and Emma? He just made things worse for everyone!

Claire immediately stopped Alex. "Hey! Who lets you hit them? Do you think you're very capable by slapping them? You're going to get our family killed. Get out now!"

Alex helplessly said, "Calm down, the Assexes are in deep sh*t now and no one can secure the deal with Waylon Realty except Dorothy. Otherwise, why would these two people get Dorothy for help?"

Claire was stunned, "What? Only Dorothy can get it?"

"Yes, Mr. Carter would only look at Dorothy. Therefore, if I'm not wrong, Madame Joanne actually sent them here for an apology. However, it turned out that they tried to force Dorothy to help them secure the contract. Do they think that we're fools?"

"Ahh—"

Claire screamed with a shock, "If Dorothy is the only one who can get it signed, then... we will get 10% of the company share and the position of general manager? Oh gosh! That's amazing!"

At this moment, Anderson's phone rang.

It was from Madame Joanne, who called to check the progress.

Anderson said, "Hi, Mom. I've apologized to Henry's family, but Dorothy refuses to help us and her trashy husband even boasted that he is going to get our family ruined and kicked out from California."

Smack!

Once again, Alex slapped Anderson across his face. After snatching his phone, he said slowly, "Your son is not here to apologize. Joanne, why don't you come over to help him with your walking stick!"

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0074

As soon as Madame Joanne heard his mockery, she wished that she could hurry forward and kill Alex with her walking stick.

However, it was a matter of life and death for the Assex family. Thus, she immediately got her eldest son, Benny to pay a Claire visit with her.

They finally arrived at the manor about twenty minutes later.

As soon as Madame Joanne entered the house, Emma cried as she complained, "Grandma, Dorothy and her trashy husband are simply rubbingsalt in the wound! They are jealous of our family's prosperity and deliberately want to destroy it! That bastard did not only hit me but dad too! He is a brute!"

As Emma was just done complaining, Alex landed another slap on her beautiful face before Madame Joanne even managed to express any opinion.

Zr0tA

“Emma Assex, a woman like you has no right to insult me, Alex Rockefeller,” Alex said indifferently after slapping Emma, “My mother and my wife can lecture me because I willingly allowed them to do so, but you’re not qualified at all.”

Emma’s face was reddened as she was extremely pissed off.

Anderson shouted furiously, “How dare you act violently here, brute?!”

Alex shrugged his shoulder. "I'll make sure you have no teeth to eat tomorrow if you ever insult me again."

Madame Joanne was extremely angry as she gasped heavily with her eyes widened.

She said as she tried to suppress her anger, "Stop being arrogant, Alex."

“Did I? I think both of them are even worse though!”

Madame Joanne interrogated as she frowned, “Anderson, Emma. Have you apologized and reinstated Dorothy just as I told you?”

Emma said, "We did. Daddy and I had apologized to them sincerely and almost kneeled before them, but they refused to forgive us and let us off thehook."

Clack!

Zr0tA

After switching on her phone and clicked on a video clip, Dorothy threw iton the table. "Is this how you apologize sincerely?"

The video showed everything happened since Anderson and Emma entered the house.

In fact, after hiring the new housemaid, Claire secretly installed CCTVs at home as she was concerned that the housemaid would steal things. Thus, the scene was coincidentally recorded.

Sincerely?

No way. In contrast, they were being arrogant and even threatened them.

Slap!

Zr0tA

Madame Joanne slapped on Anderson's face. "Bastard, didn't you hear what I said? Now, apologize to Dorothy and Claire."

As Madame Joanne was truly angry, both Anderson and Emma could only follow her instruction to placate her.

They bowed their heads and apologized obediently.

However, everyone knew that deep in their hearts they were unwilling to submit.

Soon after, Madame Joanne tried to sweet-talk a little before switching the topic to the contract between Waylon Realty, with the expectation that Dorothy must secure the deal.

Claire said, "Mom, earlier you passed down the word that whoever manages to get the deal will be given 10% of the

company shares and the position of
general manager? Is it still valid?"

A dash of extreme disgust flickered in
Madame Joanne's eyes.

However, she still nodded. "Yes."

Emma snorted and said, "It's still early to be happy about it. Do you really think Charles will definitely agree to sign the contract? He's not even Dorothy's man, so what's the point to sign it if it's not profitable to him?"

Alex said. "Don't worry. The contract is still exactly the same as before."

Dorothy said, "Grandma, I don't need the 10% company shares from Assex

Constructions nor the position of general manager. I just want my company in City South.”

Madame Joanne was delighted. “Sure.”

Alex added, “We need to put the agreement in black and white that Dorothy will own 100% of the subsidiary company shares in City South, and Assex Constructions has no right to interfere with its operation.”

CHAPTER 0075

“What? You want 100% shares? No way, 70% is the maximum.”

“Deal.”

Zr0tA

"You...?"

Alex said with a smile, "Grandma, the contract with Waylon Realty will be presented to you by tomorrow noon. Please get the equity contract of the subsidiary company in City South ready as well. It's a deal. Goodbye, Grandma. I won't be sending you off."

After leaving the villa, Madame Joanne lamented loudly while beating her chest

and stamping her feet, "Brute! He is such a brute! What have the Assexes done to deserve this!"

Meanwhile, inside the villa, Madame Claire asked with a frown, "Are you insane, Dorothy? How could you compare the 70% of subsidiary company shares in City South and the 10% shares from Assex Constructions? The difference is just too much. Also, the position of general manager at the headquarters is much more important. You are

losing the big prize while grabbing trifles.”

Dorothy shook her head and said, “Mom, it’s not easy to be a general manager in the headquarter. There’s CEO and deputy CEO, the general manager is just a puppet whose role is strenuous and unrewarding. Besides that, we are not even sure if we can successfully get the 10% shares of Assex Constructions. What’s the point if we manage to get the shares but we can’t do anything about them?”

Madame Claire said, "That's true,
Madame Joanne is too smart! By the
way, how did you come across Charles?
Did you really have dinner

Zr0tA

together earlier?"

Zr0tA

Dorothy said, "I don't know him, but Alex does. Alex has helped a lot this time."

With that, she sat on the couch. "Ouch! My feet are very sore after walking so much today!"

She looked at Alex as she massaged her feet.

Burst with excitement, Alex said as he walked toward Dorothy, "Let me help

you, Dorothy.”

Without waiting for Dorothy’s approval, he took the seat beside Dorothy and placed her fair feet on his laps, and then began to gently massage one of her feet.

Before marriage when they were still dating in university, Alex often helped Dorothy to massage her feet... Dorothy’s feet were of US 5.5 shoesize. Those fair, tender feet

were small and exquisite with appealing, slender toes – the quality was the best of the best.

Alex said as he massaged her feet,
“Dorothy, you’ve been wearing high heels quite often recently, so that’s the reason for poor blood circulation in your feet. Anyway, I’ll help to give you a foot massage every day and I promise you’ll get better.”

As he said that, he applied an aura and began to stimulate her blood circulation using a very unique technique.

Dorothy comfortably leaned on the couch as she enjoyed the process.

Alex was very happy too.

After ten months, their relationship

finally had a breakthrough and seemed to have improved.

At this moment, Claire also took a seat next to them. She placed both of her feet on the tea table and said, "Hey Alex, after you're done with Dorothy, help and massage my feet too. My feet are sore too these two days."

"What? You want me to massage your feet?"

Alex was shocked with his lips trembling a little.

He was willing to massage Dorothy's feet as he loved her. However, as for Claire, she was not tactful enough.

Claire said, "What now? Just give me a massage. I'm your mom, can't you even show a bit of filiality? Otherwise, why do I even need a son-in-law?"

Dorothy said softly, "Alex, just give a massage to my mom for a short while. You're really good at massage and it's really comfortable."

Alex felt helpless and thought, "That was because I'm worried that she would feel

too comfortable and ask me to massage her feet every day. What should I do when it comes to that?"

Fortunately, Claire looked like a 30-year-old beautiful madame instead of those old ladies with stinky feet. Her feet were slightly bigger in size than Dorothy, with her toes painted with red nail polish but the remaining features were almost the same.

“Hey Alex, since you’re so close to the boss of Waylon Realty, why don’t we get Waylon Realty to buy all the construction materials from our subsidiary company in City South? In that case, won’t we make a lot of profit?” Claire asked as she enjoyed the massage.

Zr0tA

Alex knew Claire very well as she was a greedy person. Thus, he quickly said, “I’m not certain. Mr. Carter only offers a one-time favor and it might not even work after this.”

Indeed, Claire's facial expression changed immediately and she snorted, "Hmph! So, it's just a one-time favor? I thought you will be able to make a

Zr0tA

good pile of money this time! Hurry up!

Massage harder! Ouch! Too hard! Are you

trying to kill me?"

Zr0tA

At this moment, Cheryl called.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0076

Alex put down Claire's fair, tender feet and said, "I need to answer a call."

Claire shouted, "Why are you in a hurry?
It's just a call! There's onemore foot to go!
Well, you're quite good at massaging."

Alex turned around with an annoyed look.

“I’ll wash my hand first.”

As soon as he answered the call,
Cheryl asked, “Alex, have you gotten
the hundred-year-old ginseng?”

Alex sighed as he answered, “It’s seriously
a rare item. I couldn’t find any even though
I’ve searched quite a number of places.”

Cheryl said with a smile, “I knew it. I’ve

gotten one for you.”

“Oh! Seriously?”

Zr0tA

“Yes, I just happened to see it and then immediately bought it.”

“Where are you now? I’ll come over.”

“Sure, I’ll send you the address.”

After Alex finished the call, he saw Claire with one foot lying on the teatable, hinting that she wanted him to continue with the massage. Alex immediately

said, "Dorothy, Mom, I have to go now because I have something to do."

Dorothy asked, "Where are you going?"

Alex answered with a smile, "Bro Charles is looking for me. I'll also discuss the contract with him by the way."

He did not dare to mention that he was going to meet Cheryl.

“Alright, go ahead!”

Zr0tA

“Alex, there’s still one more to go. Why don’t you finish the massage first before you leave? It’s just about ten minutes’ difference, isn’t it?” Claire swayed her foot in front of Alex as she said.

“Mom, Alex has something important to discuss. Is your foot more important than the contract?” Dorothy said as she frowned.

Claire immediately said, "Of course the contract is more important. Okay, you can go and settle the contract matter. We can continue with the massage when you come back."

Alex almost fainted. "There's a foot reflexology center near the gate of the neighbourhood. Just go there for a massage. The staff there are more professional than me."

“I have to pay for that though.”

“Damn it! Does she think that I’m a free-of-charge foot massage servant?” Alex thought as he was seriously worried that Claire would always get him to massage her feet.

Although her feet were not that bad, he could not bypass his psychological barrier.

He did not perform the massage because he wanted to, but it was just for fun.

Therefore, he quickly took out two thousand dollars from his pocket and

threw it on the tea table. "Here you go, it's my treat. You can also get a membership card and go there every day."

Zr0tA

He quickly left as soon as he ended the conversation.

The address which Cheryl sent was a pedestrian street located nearby.

Alex managed to find Cheryl at a bubble tea shop in less than twenty minutes.

She was wearing navy jeans with decoration of small white flowers and

there were a few lines of horizontal rips on her thighs. She wore a T-shirt with yellow and white stripes and a pair of sunglasses, with her hair tied in a ponytail as she sat there drinking her bubble tea.

She looked elegant yet casual.

The high-traffic scene on the pedestrian street formed a beautiful scenery.

Alex saw many people frequently turned back to enjoy the view as well.

“Dr. Cheryl, I could barely recognize you in this outfit,” Alex said with a smile as he walked toward her and sized up her physical appearance several times.

Through her sunglasses, Cheryl rolled her eyes before passing a bag, which contained a cup of bubble tea, to him. "I bought you a beverage."

Alex took it with a smile.

Many male passersby saw the scene. They could not help feeling jealous, much to their chagrin, and thought, "Oh, darn! She is such a beautiful woman, but she has a boyfriend! Well, that guy is not that cool

anyway!”

Swiftly, Alex saw the ginseng.

After taking a glimpse and sniff, Alex was certain that it was the hundred-year-old ginseng. Most importantly, it was a fresh, wild ginseng as a small amount of mud was left on its roots!

That was more valuable than the processed

ginseng.

“Good stuff! How much is it? I’ll transfer the payment to you.”

“Just a small matter. It’s a gift for you.”

Cheryl said leisurely.

Alex was stunned and shook his head.

“This won’t do. This ginseng at least cost a million dollars, so I can’t just take it without any payment.”

Cheryl said, “Didn’t you gift me the invaluable Thirteen Acupuncture of Hell? This is nothing compared to that. Moreover, I didn’t spend much.”

She tried to give a brief derivation to the ginseng.

In fact, a man tried to sell the ginseng earlier when she was at a pharmacy.

However, the store owner tried to trick the seller and insisted that the ginseng was not of premium species, hence, only offered to buy at ten thousand dollars. However, she intercepted the transaction by offering a hundred thousand dollars.

“Mainly, I’d like to bribe you with this ginseng, so that you can teach memore

about acupuncture in the future," Cheryl said with a smile.

"Sure! I think it's quite late now. Let me treat you to a meal!"

Both of them exited the pedestrian street and headed to the parking lot.

Suddenly, three men with masks rushed toward Alex and Cheryl, and one of them

tried to hit Cheryl's head with a wooden stick.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0077

“Ahhh—”

In a state of shock, Cheryl screamed and even forgot to avoid the blow.

Alex immediately wrapped Cheryl in his arms and endured the attack with his

back. It was almost instantly that he felt the heavy blow on his back.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Three consecutive blows were landed.

Not only one man tried to attack them but the other two men did too, with all their might.

Without any delay, they continued whacking him with wooden sticks.

Cheryl finally regained her focus and realized that Alex was protecting her in his embrace, while he was the one to endure the attacks. Her heart raced and tears were gushing down from her eyes as she heard the loud clunks of the wooden sticks hitting

on Alex's back. However, as she raised her head, she saw the calm and determined look in Alex's eyes.

At that particular moment, the image of his face was rooted in her mind.

Snap!

One of the wooden sticks was broken.

Afterward, someone said, "Enough, don't kill him."

Under normal circumstances, Alex would have at least four to five pieces of broken bones by now.

However, Alex suddenly let go of Cheryl. As if nothing had happened to him, he turned around and said, "Are you done? It's my turn then."

As soon as he finished talking, he kicked in the abdomen of one of the men.

Zr0tA

In an instant, that man flew away and crashed into the wall. As his arm was instantly broken, he howled while slumping on the floor. "Ahhhh! My arm! My arm is broken! Kill that bastard, bro!"

The remaining two men were shocked as they did not expect Alex to be that powerful and capable. Not only was he completely fine after sustaining those blows, to the extent that the thick wooden stick was broken, but he could also initiate a counter attack.

However, both of them got furious as the leader picked up the wooden stick and tried to hit Alex's head hard.

If such a blow landed on a normal human's head, he would have either been paralysed or died.

Cheryl screamed in shock.

Alex blocked the incoming blow with his arm.

The wooden stick was broken with a loud
snap.

Zr0tA

In that instance that the leader was stunned, Alex grabbed the wooden stick and whacked his leg, causing his calf bone to be instantly broken. The last man tried to escape as he knew that they were going to be defeated.

Unfortunately, it was too late.

Alex grabbed his hair and smashed his head hard to the wall. That man

fainted immediately.

The battle ended within ten seconds.

Anxiously, Cheryl checked on Alex's injuries. "How are you? Are you hurt? Are your bones alright?"

Alex answered, "I'm fine, it's not easy for them to hurt me,"

“How is it possible? Even the thick wooden stick was broken.”

“Do I look like I’m hurt?”

Zr0tA

With that, Alex removed the leader's mask.

Dr. Cheryl screamed, "Ahh! I know him!"

Alex asked, "Who is he?"

Cheryl replied, "A wanted criminal. The police officials have announced reward for the capture of this man and I saw it outside the hospital entrance yesterday.

He's very cruel and has killed a few

people!”

The leader’s face turned furious and tried to stab them as he pulled out a dagger.

Alex immediately slapped him across his face as he snorted.

He was concussed by the imbued aura in the slap.

His head crashed into the wall and then he
fainted on the ground

Cheryl asked anxiously, "What should we do
now?"

Zr0tA

Alex said with a smile, "Don't worry, didn't I just handle them? Look at you, your makeup is messed up by your tears. Why are you panicking?"

With that, he involuntarily raised his hand and wiped away her tears.

Cheryl was stunned but her eyes were immediately filled with gentleness.

Only then, Alex awkwardly withdrew his hand.

As he stomped on the leader, waking him up, he shouted, "Say it! Who sent you here?"

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0078

The leader had a firm attitude.

He glared at Alex and refused to utter a word.

Alex snapped his finger. "Okay then. Let me see how firm you are. If you can last a

minute, I'll let you guys go."

ZroTA

As the leader's eyes were filled with bemusement, Alex pressed his finger on his brow.

It was imbued with a strange aura.

In the next second, the homicide leader grimaced in fear and sweat bullets.

A terrifying roar came out from his throat, as if he had encountered the

worst suffering and torment in his life.

As Cheryl witnessed such a scene, she was dumbfounded and unable to comprehend the situation.

Not even a minute – it was just three seconds – the homicide leader fell to the ground with a thud as his will collapsed. “I’ll say! Ahh! I’ll say anything! I beg you, please make it stop! Please spare my life!”

Cheryl's eyes widened in bewilderment.

His response was too exaggerated. Was he putting on a joint performance with Alex?

Zr0tA

Once again, Alex pressed his finger on the leader's brow and he finally calmed down afterwards. Enervated, he sat on the ground and sweat heavily. His face turned white as a sheet as he shuddered in fear, even his eyes were fully filled with dreads.

Without waiting for Alex to ask, he said on his own initiative, "Yes. It's from Mr. Lark from the pharmacy. He requested us to snatch that hundred-year-old ginseng from her hand."

Cheryl's eyes widened in surprise. "It's him?!

That's too evil!"

Alex said, "There is no need to resort to violence just to snatch a ginseng. Looking at your offensive stance earlier, not only you wanted to snatch the ginseng, but you also wanted to kill. Tell me everything, otherwise I'll let you the power of the Soul Banishing Touch."

What he had just used was a simple trick in The Ultimate Book of Medicine, which was specialized in inflicting torture.

However, such a trick must not be looked down. Based on the inherited information, once Soul Banishing Touch was cast on the opponent, he would suffer an unbearable pain as if his soul was shattered by countless bugs.

Needless to say, normal people would not be able to endure it.

Even if they were trained experts, most of

them would not last a minute.

Zr0tA

Alex was not proficient in Soul Banishing Touch as he only used it for the first time. Initially, he thought the leader could last for several dozen of seconds but he did not know that he could not even last for three seconds.

The leader hurriedly explained, "Yes. We saw your girlfriend. She's too beautiful and we like her very much. So, we wanted to grab her into the car..."

When Cheryl heard it, her face turned pale as she broke out in a cold sweat.

If Alex did not save her just now and once she was dragged into the car by the murderers, she would have suffered a fate worse than death.

Earlier, she just had a narrow escape!

“Scumbag!”

Wham!

Alex knocked out the homicide leader with a
single stomp.

Zr0tA

Police siren sounded.

At this moment, a police car arrived.

It turned out that a passerby had just made a call to the police after seeing several masked men beating Alex with sticks. So, the police hurried to the scene.

At a glance, the three of them

were actually A-class wanted criminals – it was unbelievable.

The police officers were headed by a young female captain. The captain, who was in great joy, immediately ordered her men to cuff the three wanted criminals. After asking for the testimony and being shown the video evidence captured by Alex's phone, she could understand the case easily.

The captain immediately took her men and hurried to the pharmacy.

With the presence of both testimony and evidence, denial would be impossible.

Mr. Lark from the pharmacy was ashen-faced, as though he had lost his parents. Never did he expect that he would be defeated by such a little woman like Cheryl.

The dust settled.

Cheryl let out a long sigh as she covered her chest with her hands.

She said to Alex with a smile, "You saved my life. What should I do? Should I devote myself to you?"

After taking a peek at that beautiful curvy body of hers, he said while averting his

gaze, "Don't tease me. I'm weak to teases."

A dash of flicker appeared in Cheryl's eyes.

"What is it? Your wife, Dorothy still doesn't let you touch her? What is she thinking about? She should either live well with you or get divorced as soon as possible and give the opportunity to someone else."

Alex blurted out, "To you?"

Cheryl half-jokingly said, "That's fine. If you dare to get divorced, I'll dare to marry you."

With that, Alex could not refute her.

Zr0tA

Cheryl said with a light hum, "Coward, don't tease me next time."

They had dinner for about two hours.

After that, both of them waved goodbyes at the junction and returned to their home respectively.

Not only Cheryl had given him a hundred-year-old ginseng, but also the

medicine that she had dispensed. After returning to Maple Villa, Alex immediately prepared to boil the medicine for Brittany.

The wild ginseng weighed about a hundred grams.

Since Brittany did not need such an amount of ginseng, so Alex only cut it into one fifth for her and stored the remaining portions in case of unforeseeable needs.

After all, the hundred-year-old ginseng was decent enough to save lives.

The next day, at the headquarters of Assex Constructions.

Many higher-ups from the Assex family had gathered together, including the two Assexes brothers, the juniors and the head of the family, Madame Joanne.

Although Alex and Dorothy had downplayed that the deal with Waylon Realty had been irrevocably sealed. However, as long as the contract had not been seen by them, the seed of doubt would be sowed.

“Grandma. If Dorothy has actually signed the contract, then do we really need to give 70% of the subsidiary company shares in City South?” Emma said with vitriol as she was embarrassed that after getting the position of general manager in the subsidiary company, she was

removed within a day.

Madame Joanne gritted her teeth as she heard Dorothy's name.

"She's dreaming!"

Emma danced in joy. "That's right. We can kick out Dorothy as soon as we get hold of the contract."

Soon after, Dorothy came and Alex followed behind her.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0079

“Alex, do you think we’ll acquire the subsidiary company shares in CitySouth without a hitch?” Dorothy’s heart was filled with daunting anticipation.

ZROVA

While patting on the briefcase, which he carried with him, Alex said, "Rest assured, I promise."

The contract that had been signed by Waylon Realty earlier was placed inside the briefcase.

Dorothy grinned from ear to ear as her beautiful eyes opened a sliver.

In that instant, Alex was a little stunned.

After all, it had been a very long time since Dorothy let out such a joyful laughter in front of him.

He suddenly drew closer. After reaching out to clasp her hand, he said, "Dorothy, thank you for all your support during this period of time. From now on, I won't let you bear such a heavy burden by yourself. I'll help you to share the burden so that you

don't have to suffer anymore."

As Dorothy felt the sincerity in his grip, a gush of sorrow filled her and she wanted to cry.

"It's fine, as long as you know that."

After a pause, she said with a smile,
“After acquiring the equity contract of
the subsidiary company in City South, I’ll
treat you to a meal, with an add-on
reward of a hundred thousand dollars.”

Speaking of a hundred thousand dollars,
Alex recalled that the hospital had
returned about ninety thousand dollars to
him when Brittany was discharged from
the hospital.

So, he said, “I don’t need the money. Last
time, I didn’t use the money that you gave

for my mom's treatment at all.

Furthermore, I'm not short of money."

"They are separate matters, so let's not confuse them with each other. This is your reward for this time."

Alex did not utter another word but only laughed.

He still had about thirty million dollars in

his bank account. However, Brittany needed to make a comeback in their family business and they would definitely spend a large sum of money at the early phase.

Therefore, he did not tell Dorothy about it.

As for the grievances in the Rockefeller family, He did not plan to tell her either so that she could stop worrying unnecessarily.

Soon after, they entered Assex
Constructions.

As they saw numerous descendants of the Assex family had congregated inside the chairperson's office, with Madame Joanne sitting proudly on the black leather sofa, both

Zr0tA

of them could not help getting a misleading impression that they had just entered a court trial.

It was suffocating by just being suppressed by the number of those people.

Alex calmly rested his hand at the back of Dorothy's waist.

Benny took the lead and said, "Did you get

the contract?”

Dorothy nodded as she said, “Yes, we have it.”

Benny immediately said, “Show it to me.”

As Alex clapped on the briefcase, he said with a smile, “It’s here!”

“Hurry and take it out,” Emma said as she glared at him.

“What’s the hurry?” Alex said as he dug his ear, “Where is the equity transfer contract for the subsidiary company in City South? We had come to an agreement yesterday

that we'll hand over the contract and you'll hand over yours at the same time. Fair and square."

Benny chided, "Alex Rockefeller, you're just an abandoned child of the Rockefellers and a kept man who lives off Dorothy. Do you think it's your turn to yell here? Get out of here."

Alex said with his eyes squinted, "The contract is with me, do you really want me

to get out? Don't blame me when the contract is gone later. Mr. Carter did say that this is the one and only contract. If you lose it, you'll never get it again."

"Nonsense!"

Zr0tA

Alex pursed his lips as he was too lazy to even speak to him.

Old Lady Assex said, "Exchange the contracts

now.”

Benny took out the prepared contract and placed it on the table.

Alex also took out his contract and put it on the table.

The exchange occurred.

Benny immediately took the contract to inspect the contract seal. After verifying that the seal was of Waylon Realty, he said with a sigh, "It's real."

Finally, Madame Joanne felt relief and said, "Keep it properly."

And immediately, Emma burst into laughter.

Dorothy said with a frown, "What are you laughing at?"

Emma said, "I'm just laughing someone avaricious who overrates her own abilities."

CHAPTER 0080

Benny also let out a laugh. "Dorothy, do you really think that Assex Constructions will transfer 70% of the subsidiary company shares in CitySouth to you? You're too naive. Keep on dreaming."

"What?" Dorothy exclaimed in surprise, "This contract is fake?"

Madame Joanne cackled like a hen. "Of course, it's fake. The Assex family doesn't need ungrateful people like you. Dorothy, you're overambitious.

How dare you try to dominate the subsidiary company in City South? What qualification do you have? Who gave you the courage to do so? This trash who's standing beside you? From now on, your family line is no longer part of the Assexes. You are expelled from the Assexes."

"What? Grandma, how could you break

your promise?" Dorothy was on the verge of tears.

Madame Joanne said, "Why should I keep my promise when dealing with shameless and despicable people like you? You're unworthy of being a member of the Assexs."

Emma chided, "We don't welcome you both, so you can get out of here now. Otherwise, I'll call the security guard to have you both

removed.”

The rest of the Assexes proudly chortled,
with a lofty look on their faces.

Dorothy and Alex were detested by them, as
if they were some low-lives.

Clap! Clap! Clap!

At this moment, thunderous claps were heard.

Zr0tA

The Assexes' gaze turned toward the direction of the sound. Unexpectedly, it was that trashy Alex who clapped his hands while laughing.

They were dumbfounded and thought Alex had gone mad due to irritation.

"What's with those handclaps and laughs? Are you crazy?" said a junior from the Assexes.

“I think he has gone crazy, after waking from his dream and receiving such a blow,” said Emma as her face was full of mockery.

Alex chuckled. “Impressive. That’s really a splendid performance. I didn’t expect you people would trick us with a fake contract... But, do you think you’re only the ones who know such a trick?”

With that, the rest of the Assexes were

stunned. Emma also donned a surprised look.

Emma asked, "What do you mean?"

Alex said indifferently, "Just as its literal meaning."

As Madame Joanne was startled by his words, she hurriedly shouted, "Hurry, hurry. Look at the contents of the contract."

Benny immediately opened up the contract and reviewed the contents meticulously, especially the several important terms and conditions. As he looked at the contents, he fell into despair and said with hastened breaths, "It's wrong. It's wrong. These aren't the terms that we have agreed in the contract. The prices have changed,

hence, if according to these prices Assex
Constructions will lose everything and face
bankruptcy.”

“Ahh!”

Madame Joanne made a loud shriek as she
wobbled and fell to the ground.

In the midst of chaos, the rest of the
Assexs pushed against each other and

shouted as they hurriedly helped her to get up. It had finally calmed down after a while. Madame Joanne sat on the sofa with her eyes widened in anger. "You... You immoral couple."

Alex said with a sardonic laugh, "If you can fool us with a fake contract, can't we do the same too? Old Lady, do you think everyone else in this world is a fool? The real contract is here."

Then, he took out another contract from the
briefcase.

Zr0tA

He even opened every page on the contract so that they could see the terms and conditions clearly.

Benny shouted, "Yes. It's real. It's the real contract."

Emma wanted to catch him off guard and snatch away the contract.

However, Alex instantly gave her a spank.

“Now I’ve changed my mind. I don’t want the 70% subsidiary company shares in City South, but 100%. I’ll give you fifteen minutes to prepare the new contract. If I don’t see the contract after fifteen minutes, I’ll tear this contract into pieces and don’t you ever think about doing business with Waylon Realty in the future.”

While covering her face with hands in disbelief, Emma said, “Who do you think you are? What qualification do you have to

“speak such a thing? Is Waylon Realty owned by your family? Since Waylon Realty has willingly signed this contract, even if you tear the contract now, we’ll just get a new one.”

Alex snorted. “You can try and do so.”

Benny said, “Dorothy, after all the blood of the Assex family flows inside your body. How could you just stand there and watch this outsider swaggering around?”

Dorothy was on the verge of tears as she shook her head. "He's not an outsider but my husband. You people don't even treat me as a member of the Assexes, and now you even want to expel my family line. The subsidiary company in City South was established by myself from scratch. Even if I have borrowed the resources from Assex Constructions, I'll pay back the sum by tenfold or hundredfold within these few years.

My request is not much compared to the 10% of Assex Constructions' shares.

“Furthermore, I didn’t sign the contract, but my husband did.”

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0081 - 90

“What? This loser signed it?”

“How could he, of all people, have such power?”

“How could he sign this contract when no one else could?”

The Assexes couldn't believe what they were hearing.

Alex checked the time and said, "Five minutes have passed. You still have ten minutes... Also, I could sign this and you can't because Charles Carter owes me a favor."

Emma immediately started yelling.

"There's no way! Stop trying to bluff your

way out of this! Who do you think you are anyway? You're a shame to the Rockefellers. Your parents betrayed our country, so you're no better than a street rat. If you haven't been sucking up to Dorothy, your mom would've died ages ago! And you would have starved to death too. So, who do you think you are, huh? As if Charles Carter could ever owe you a favor. You're overestimating your worth..."

With a cold gaze, Alex lunged towards

Emma and grabbed her by the hair. He then smashed her head onto the table.

Zr0tA

Emma's front teeth were knocked out and her nose started bleeding profusely.

"No one is ever allowed to insult my parents. I will investigate what happened to them thoroughly. Emma Assex, if you dare insult them again, I'll make sure your life is a living hell," Alex said with a cold gaze that sent a chill down anyone's spine. No one dared to approach him.

Even Emma's father, Anderson, didn't dare to

step in for his daughter.

Alex said coldly, "Eight more minutes."

Benny spoke up. "I have Mr. Carter's number, I'll give him a call to confirm this."

The call went through immediately. After just a brief moment of conversation, Charles hung up.

The old lady asked in panic, "What did Mr. Carter say?"

Benny glanced quickly in Alex's direction and said, "He's not lying. Carter said that this was the only contract available. If it were to be destroyed, there wouldn't be a second one. Someone from Stoneworks is with him right now."

Stoneworks was the second-best building and furnishing company in California. They were the Assexes's biggest competitor.

If the Assexes were to lose this contract, Stoneworks would become the biggest furnishing company in California and crush the Assexes.

It was clear that Charles had only signed this contract because of Alex.

“Five more minutes!” Alex reminded them.

The old lady shot him a dirty glare and slammed the table. “Hand him the contract.”

Alex smiled and said, “Now that’s more I like it. Everyone can earn money in peace and build a successful business in California. You can go make your mad cash

while we just run our small little business.
Let's not cause anymore trouble, alright?"

The Assexex's contract was immediately amended and printed out. Everything was set after the Assexes signed it.

After Alex thoroughly confirmed that the Assexex's contract was true and fair, he threw the real Carter's contract to Benny.

The old lady closed her eyes with knitted eyebrows as she fell deep in thought.

As Alex was about to leave with Dorothy in hand, the old lady opened her eyes. "Hold on."

The two turned around to look at her.

The old lady's demeanor was different.

Her cold glare disappeared completely

and her face was plastered with a sweet smile instead. "Dorothy, I have to give it to you for saving our company. You're right, our branch in City South was built up with your blood, sweat, and tears.

Grandma went over the line just now.

We're a family, both you and Beatrice are still my dear little granddaughters. Henry has passed for quite some time too. So if you have any problems, you can always come to me."

Her tone was extremely calm, as if she

couldn't even hear Emma's painful cries.

Dorothy froze, but she still nodded and said,

"Thanks, Grandma."

Alex and Dorothy then rushed back to their branch in City South.

Emma was covering her nose, hoping to stop the bleeding. Angered, she asked,

"Grandma, why didn't you kick them out of

the Assex family? Did you forget how she

Zr0tA

treated you? That Rockefeller bastard
doesn't respect you in the slightest too.
They just took the branch from City South
by force!"

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0082

The old lady huffed. "You idiot. Don't worry, I know what I'm doing."

Benny explained. "The CEO of Waylon Realty, Mr. Carter actually lent a hand to Alex just to help Dorothy get the branch from City South. This means that they are quite close. If it was Dorothy who signed it, she

might've just used her body to persuade him. But if Alex did it, then it could have been for a different reason. It could be that William Rockefeller had worked with Charles Carter when he was still alive. If we use their relationship, the Assex family would be better able to work with Waylon Realty."

Meanwhile, Dorothy had just gotten into their car. "Grandma's sudden change in attitude was most likely due to your relationship with Mr. Carter. They'll want

to work with Mr.

Carter through you as a way to improve their partnership.

Alex huffed. "She can dream on. Now that you have full control over the branch in City South, you'll be able to expand this business to its full potential... I know it's best to not cut ties with them immediately, since we can still take advantage of their platforms to grow the business first. Who wouldn't take this opportunity anyway? However, by the

time that they realize they won't be able to get anything out of me, that old hag will immediately switch up her attitude again and not let you reap any benefits from their side."

Zr0tA

Dorothy nodded in agreement.

Alex had just helped Zoey by coincidence. Once he used up his favor, then the Carters would no longer see the need to help him anymore.

“Oh right, how did you know to prepare two different contracts? You didn’t even tell me,” Dorothy asked.

"I know that old hag all too well. It was just precautionary measures. I didn't think I'd actually have to use it, to be honest."

"You're just so amazing!" Dorothy smiled.

"Do I get a reward then?"

"What would you like?"

"Can... can you give me a kiss?"

Zr0tA

Dorothy's eyes widened as she stared at him in surprise when she heard his words.

Alex looked at her and smiled sadly. "It's fine."

Suddenly, Dorothy shifted to her side and pecked him on the cheek gently.

Alex was overjoyed. He thought, 'This is great! I'm one step closer to the fourth

base!

In just a few minutes, the two arrived at the branch in City South.

As soon as she became the general manager, Emma had ordered the staff to deny

Dorothy access to the company yesterday.

She even ordered the removal of Dorothy's work tag and keycard.

Thus, Dorothy was prevented from entering by security. She couldn't get in at all.

The employees had not been notified that Dorothy had regained ownership of the company.

“Emma Assex went too far! What do we do now?” Dorothy huffed in anger.

“Kiss me one more time and I’ll help you force your way in!” Alex smirked.

“Ugh, just don’t. I’m not in the mood for this.”

Alex was just joking. He grabbed her by the hand and said, “Don’t worry, you have me. Even if the sky comes crashing down, I’ll be

the shield to protect you.”

Alex then dragged Dorothy into the company, preparing to barge in by force.

Just then, three security guards rushed over to stop them.

“Do you really want to stop us? I already told you that my wife is your newboss.”

The three security guards were still blocking their way, refusing to let them pass.

Why would they do this?

Zr01A

This was all because Emma had given them a
pay raise.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0083

Alex's eyes suddenly emitted a murderous glare. He pulled Dorothy behind him, shielding her from the men.

"Be careful!" Dorothy was nervous and worried. She had no idea that Alex was no longer as weak as before. These security guards were nowhere nearly as powerful as he was.

In just a bat of an eye, the guards were kicked in the guts. They fell to the ground harshly and weren't able to get back up at all.

"All three of you are fired!" Alex said as he walked into the company with Dorothy in hand.

Many of the employees who were sitting

near the windows witnessed this incident. They were shocked and their mouths were agape. News quickly spread throughout the whole company:

“Oh my god look! Ms. Assex is back! She even brought a guy along with her and he just beat up the security guards!”

“Wait, which Assex?”

“These are the photos, it’s our previous general manager, Dorothy Assex.”

“What? Did she bring someone along to get her position back? I would too, to be honest.”

“Why would you even dare to say that?”

Shermaine had heard the news from around the company as well. She rushed to the window to see it for herself.

However, Dorothy and Alex had already entered the building. Something didn't sit right with her and her heart started pounding nervously.

She remembered that Emma had not come to work since yesterday evening.

She hadn't received any calls from Emma as well. She was feeling

extremely uneasy.

She was especially worried since she had a large loan to repay and she needed to support her entire family as well.

Cold sweat trickled down Shermaine's forehead.

She called Emma repeatedly.

However, minutes passed and Emma still hadn't answered any of her calls.

Beep, beep, beep...

"Pick up, oh god, please pick up..." Shermaine murmured.

Just then, Dorothy arrived at the secretary's office with a chilling

expression. "Are you trying to call Emma?"

"Ah..." Shermaine was frightened. Her mouth opened wide in shock.

"There's no use doing that. Even if she did pick up, she wouldn't come to save you."

"Pack your things and get your remaining salary from the finance department,"

Dorothy said coldly. She was disappointed

in Shermaine.

After all, she had
worked with this
woman for years.

Shermaine, however, tried to cling on to
her last fragment of hope. "Why should I?
You're no longer the general manager of
this company. You don't have the power to
fire me."

Shermaine's loud protests had attracted quite a few employees. Even the vice president of the company and a few managers came rushing over.

Frankly, everyone still wanted to work with Dorothy. Many employees have been working with Dorothy since the company started. The trust they had in her was impeccable. However, this was just a mere branch in City South. They had to obey the Assex family's every order.

Someone spoke up, asking Dorothy to stop causing a scene. They just didn't want Dorothy to make things worse for herself.

Alex decided to stay silent this whole while. He stood aside and got himself a cup of tea.

"I don't have the power to?" Dorothy scoffed, staring down at Shermaine. "Well, you are right about one thing. I'm in fact, no

longer the general manager of the company. That's because I'm the CEO of this company from now on. This is the contract for the transfer of shares. Are you convinced now, Shermaine Ford?"

Everyone stared in disbelief when Dorothy pulled out the contract.

It was unbelievable that Emma had been kicked out, after just securing her position as president.

Oh, how the tables have turned. Dorothy had full control over the company and none of the Assexes could interfere with the company's decisions anymore.

Everyone cheered and clapped as they welcomed Dorothy back to the company.

When Shermaine realized that Dorothy was telling the truth, her heart dropped. Knowing that she would be fired, she dropped to her knees and clung to

Dorothy's legs. "Ms. Assex, please spare me! I was wrong. I shouldn't have been so greedy; I was blinded by money. Please beat me up instead. Don't fire me! I have loans to pay for both an apartment and a car. I have to support my family too! I can't lose this job!

Zr0tA

"Ms. Assex, I swear I'll be good, I'll be your loyal lapdog!"

Dorothy took a step back and kicked her

away. "I will not let the same dog bite me a second time. Pack your things and get out!"

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0084

Shermaine sobbed uncontrollably.

However, Dorothy didn't even want to look at her. "Inform all the higher-ups that we're going to have a meeting in the first meeting room."

The news caused an uproar within the company. Numerous employees cheered loudly as well. Everyone didn't dare go against Emma back then because they didn't want any trouble. However, despite their cowardice, they still sided with Dorothy in spirit.

Zr0tA

Alex, on the other hand, didn't have anything to do at the time.

He looked at Shermaine who was

extremely upset and still sobbing uncontrollably. Alex shook his head lightly and walked off.

Just then, a luxurious car arrived in front of the company. A man and a woman got out of the car.

The man was in a smart suit looking dashing, and the woman was Beatrice Assex.

Why were they here?

To propose.

The security guards at the entrance of the building received the news of Dorothy regaining her position in the company.

Hence, as Dorothy's sister, Beatrice could enter the building and make preparations for a proposal.

The security guards of the company were curious by the appearance of Dorothy's sister.

They rushed up to Beatrice and asked, "Lady Beatrice, who are you proposing to?"

However, Beatrice smirked and replied, "You'll see."

With the help of the guards, the preparations were complete. There were big bouquets of flowers and balloons of various colors surrounding a white luxurious car. Two drones flew up mid-air with the edges of a pink banner hung onto them. A line of words was written on the banner.

The guards were shocked.

The line of words was...

“Marry me, Dorothy! I love you! I want to spend the rest of my life with you!”

‘Dorothy, Dorothy Assex. Isn’t that the name of the CEO of our company?’

'Isn't our CEO married?'

Everyone in the company witnessed the scene. Initially, it didn't cause such a huge commotion. They were just taking guesses on who this rich young man had his eyes on to propose so extravagantly. However, once the banner was revealed, everyone had their mouths wide open.

Dorothy had been with Alex even before their marriage.

Dorothy even resorted to death threats just so that she could marry Alex when the Rockefeller incident happened and rumors started spreading. That showed just how true their love was... Why would anyone try to ruin such a beautiful relationship?

What's worse was that Dorothy's sister was helping this guy out as well.

Rumors started spreading in the unofficial company group chat as everyone seemed to have their opinions on this.

Someone with the name 'Nightmare Husband' had spread the news...

(After that incident, Ms. Assex's husband had become a total loser. He worked as a slave in the Assex mansion. I heard he couldn't even step foot into Ms. Assex's bedroom!)

(Ms. Assex probably didn't have any attraction towards that Alex guy. They may be married but that's probably just in name.)

(Now that Ms. Assex's sister has lent this guy

a hand, wouldn't that mean that this is the real deal? Alex is just helpless at this point. I think this guy had already asked for blessings from the Assexes! This proposal is just plain courtesy. Ms. Assex will totally accept the proposal!]

With this, everyone believed that this was all true.

Why would Beatrice be doing this anyway?

Meanwhile, Alex was drinking tea while reading the newspaper in the CEO's office.

He paced around the room and walked towards the window. When he saw the proposal scene, his expression darkened.

"Who the f*ck is this?"

Zr0tA

"Gosh, it's such a bother to have a gorgeous wife. I always have to chase these pests away."

“And you, Beatrice. You seem like you’re asking for a beating.”

He put down his cup and turned around to go downstairs.

“Alex?” Suddenly, a female voice called out to him.

He turned his head and realized that it was a woman in a dark grey uniform. She was in

her mid-twenties and was wearing a pair of black glasses. She seemed well-developed with a curvy body.

"Maya?"

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0085

The woman was Maya Howards, Alex's university senior. She was a year older than him and one of the most popular girls in her year as well. She had both brains and brawns, literally a jewel at school.

She was the student council president in her third year until she graduated;

successfully organized multiple major school events; a social butterfly; and had a strong spirit. She was praised by everyone at school as a truly amazing woman.

Zr0tA

After university, Alex had asked her to help Dorothy build up this company, the branch in City South. And she did, building it to what it was now. Maya was Dorothy's best assistant.

However, Maya wasn't at the company often. She would usually be leading a team to organize events in other areas. Alex had not expected to bump into her today.

"Alex, what happened between you and

Dorothy?

“Is your relationship really in shambles?
Why would your wife’s sister be helping
your rival to propose to your wife?”

Alex looked cold. “She has a death wish.”

Maya nodded. “You’re right. If I were in
your shoes, I would slap her across the
face right there and then.”

Alex smiled. "What do you think I'm doing?
Don't stop me, alright?"

"Sure, sure. You don't have to act all tough
in front of me. It really is unfortunate that
you have to deal with this family of three. If
you really can't bear it anymore, you could
just

divorce Dorothy, you know? I don't want to see you upset." Maya said as she looked at him with sympathy. But she also looked as if she was hiding something from him.

Alex's attention was at the elevator door so he did not notice.

He nodded. "Don't worry, Maya, I'm no longer a loser anymore. I have been reborn."

Maya's eyes lit up under her glasses as she noticed that he did seem different today.

"Thanks, Maya!" Alex suddenly said.

He was truly grateful toward her.

Maya Howards was one of the very few people who still remained friends with him all this while. Even after his father's death and him getting kicked out of his family.

She had only come to work in this company because Alex had asked her to.

She had many better options elsewhere than at this company. So why else would she be working here?

Zr0tA

Maya then insisted. "You shouldn't go down there. Everyone just wants to laugh at you. From what I heard, that Felix Shepherd guy helped our company sign quite a few projects during the Block City exhibition. If your wife has any interest in him, you'd have to bear this shame in front of everyone!"

Felix Shepherd?

Alex frowned as soon as he heard this name.

This guy had tried chasing after Dorothy in the past. He was the son of the CEO of Pegasus International, Edgar Shepherd.

Ugh...

This was the same guy who lost a diamond ring at the Urasawa Restaurant.

Moreover, both Claire and Beatrice were fond of him. Claire had even wanted him to become her son-in-law for the longest time. Since he hadn't appeared in quite a while, Alex thought that he had given up. He didn't expect Felix to pop up out of nowhere as well.

Alex then texted Lord Lex. "Edgar Shepherd's son is proposing to my wife in front of the branch of Assex Constructions in City South. Have him come by here to watch out for his son."

With a gentle chime, they arrived at the ground floor. Alex immediately stepped out of the elevator.

Maya caught up to Alex despite being in high heels. "Why are you trying to humiliate

yourself? Don't you know how harsh
Beatrice can be with words?"

However, Alex stayed silent though his eyes
were cold and determined.

Beatrice was getting cocky outside. "Felix,
we'd be able to humiliate Alex Rockefeller
publicly with this. He'll be the laughing
stock of this whole company!"

Beatrice was still being petty about having to call Alex 'daddy' the otherday.

That's why she helped Felix plan this whole fiasco when he reached out to her, just so that he could propose to her sister in front of the company.

Felix was overjoyed when Beatrice accepted him as her brother-in-law. He said, "Don't worry sis. When I do become your brother-in-law, I'll be sure to pay the favor back. I'll even give you a BMW M8."

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0086

Beatrice was overwhelmed. "Thanks Felix!"

Felix was staring at the tall building, smiling proudly.

However, little did he know that his father was already rushing towards them, despite having a cast on one of his legs. In

the driver's seat was his bodyguard, Jay Sanders.

Jay was around his thirties and is quite skilled in fighting as he used to be the first runner-up in the national kickboxing competition. He was extremely confused as to why Edgar felt the need to rush to apologize to someone even with his leg broken. He asked, "Mr. Shepherd, you're badly injured. Even if you did want to apologize, couldn't you have waited until your wound healed? Your health is

important.”

Edgar was panicking. “What would you know? That bastard Felix is trying to dig our graves! He’s proposing to the wife of Lord Rockefeller. Now that Lord Lex Gunther wants me there, how could I not rush?”

Upon hearing this, Jay fell speechless and sped up the car.

At the same time, Alex and Maya had reached the ground floor.

Some employees were shocked to see Alex. But they were equally as curious.

Someone texted the group chat.

[Alex is there too. He seems like he's walking out of the building. Do you think they're going to fight?]

Many people pressed themselves against the window, hoping to see the incident go down.

Beatrice looked up at the crowded windowsills, acting smug about this whole fiasco.

She thought, 'Hmph, you loser, I'll have you humiliated in public and you'll be a laughing stock forever. I'll have everyone call you the Ultimate Cuckold!'

Just as she was deep in her thoughts, she realized that a man and a woman walked out of the entrance.

With a closer look, she asked, "Holy sh*t, what is the Ultimate Cuck doing here?"

Thinking back to how violent Alex was with Emma and Anderson, Beatrice couldn't help but shudder. However, with Felix by her side, she was filled with courage and arrogance again.

"Felix, this loser actually showed up. If he were to hit me, you'd protect me, right?" Beatrice said as she turned to

Felix.

“Absolutely.”

Alex stared at the luxurious car that was in the middle of all of the flowers. He was slightly surprised to see that it was yet another BMW M8.

However, noticing both Felix's and Beatrice's smug smirks on their faces, Alex could feel his blood boiling.

Alex approached them slowly and coldly.

The crowd upstairs watched in anticipation as their hearts pounded with excitement.

Zr0tA

“He’s going for it. Alex is going for it!”

“They’re actually going to fight. I wonder who will win?”

“One was here to take Ms. Assex’s hand in marriage whereas the other is trying to protect her at all costs. This would be interesting!”

Someone chimed in and said, “That might not be right. Alex hadn’t done anything for the past six months. I heard he couldn’t even stand up for himself back when he

was bullied by his wife's mother and sister.

How will he have the courage to fight?"

Upon hearing this, everyone sighed. Alex used to be the best of the best, but with that incident, he could never go back to that life anymore.

30m, 20m, 15m...

Everyone watched as the two narrowed

their distance. Alex suddenly stopped and looked at the entrance. No one had any idea what he was upto.

Someone pounded their chest and said, "Oh god, this Alex guy really is hopeless. I thought he's manned up for once and will beat up this guy for wanting to steal his wife! Now that he chickened out midway, he really is a loser. He's just a loser!"

Many of the female employees' faces were

filled with disappointment and disdain.

Zr0tA

However, a black Bentley appeared at the entrance.

As the car slowed down, Edgar noticed Alex immediately.

Before Jay could help him down the car, he pushed the door open and ran.

With a loud thud, he kneeled before Alex.

"Mr. Rockefeller, I was wrong!"

ZrótA

CHAPTER 0087

Why would Edgar drop to his knees in public, throwing his dignity out like this?

It was because he was terrified.

He knew what Lord Lex Gunther was capable of doing.

After all, Lord Lex Gunther's status and power were much higher than that of Pegasus International. Now that his goddaughter was being harassed, Edgar was definitely dead meat.

Moreover, his family had been broken up and all his successful companies had been ruined, taken over by others.

Edgar was worried that he could be next.

After kneeling down, he slapped himself hard numerous times and didn't even look at his son.

He didn't even go easy on himself as his face was swollen from merely eight slaps. Everyone in the company was shocked, including Maya.

'What is happening?'

Those with sharp eyes noticed that Edgar's ride was a Bentley worth 500 thousand dollars. They couldn't help but gawk at it.

Zr0tA

Beatrice was stunned as well. However, she snapped herself back to reality and glared at Alex. "Hey, you loser, stop it! Do you think you'd seem more powerful with this paid actor?"

She turned to Felix. "Felix, this guy must have been hired by this loser. Isn't he childish?"

Beatrice's words snapped Felix back to reality as well.

He froze upon Edgar's appearance. The fact that Edgar was down on his knees and slapping himself had shocked Felix to his core.

'That is my father!' He thought.

Felix immediately rushed towards Edgar to help him up. "Dad, what are you doing?! Why are you doing this? Have you gone

mental?!”

Beatrice took a step back. She couldn't believe what she was hearing.

Edgar slapped Felix across the face. His actions worsened the condition of his broken leg, but he didn't care about that at all. He scolded loudly. "You bastard, how dare you

try to woo Master Alex's wife? Do you have a death wish? Kneel down and grovel before Mr. Rockefeller."

Beatrice's eyes widened in disbelief.

Alex then shot her a cold glare.

Beatrice was frightened and ran off to a distance.

“Ah!” Felix couldn’t bring himself to grovel before Alex. The fact that he was slapped was infuriating enough. “Dad, are you insane?! Are you mistaken? This guy is just the Assexes’s useless son-in-law. He was even kicked out by his own family! Why do I have to kneel for him? Who is he anyway? I can defeat him in a blink of an eye!”

Edgar was extremely furious, he screamed, “Jay, pin him down and slap

him!”

Jay came forward and grabbed Felix.

“I’m sorry, young lord.”

Zr0tA

Felix didn't have a chance against Jay.
He was pinned to the ground and
slapped across the face several times.

Jay didn't dare go easy on Felix in front of
Alex as Felix started bleeding profusely out
of his mouth.

Both Maya and Beatrice froze at the sight of
this.

The curious employees turned dead silent
from where they stood watching.

No one had expected it to end up like this.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0088

"I remember now. This middle-aged guy is the CEO of Pegasus International, Edgar Shepherd. The one proposing is Felix Shepherd who's been harassing Lady Dorothy for quite a while. Well, isn't this great? Felix's father is groveling before Alex."

"How could Alex have the CEO of Pegasus

International kneel for him?"

Zr0tA

This was a mystery everyone was itching to unravel.

Edgar immediately ordered Jay to hand him the check they had prepared earlier. Edgar handed it to Alex with the utmost respect and said, "Master Alex, this is twenty million dollars. Please accept it! It's just a little gift. I won't get up until you accept this!"

Maya was shocked once again, watching

Alex puzzledly.

Alex stared at the check emotionlessly.

Suddenly, Alex's phone started ringing. It was a call from Lex Gunther.

Alex took a glance in Edgar's direction and picked up the phone calmly. "Hey, Lord Lex!"

Upon hearing the name, cold sweat trickled down Edgar's forehead. He raised the check higher, his face filled with despair.

Lex said, "Master Alex, is Edgar Shepherd from Pegasus International there with you now?"

With a slight smile, Alex stared at Edgar and said, "Ah, Edgar Shepherd from Pegasus International..."

Color drained from Edgar's face, his whole body trembled as if he was about to be executed.

Alex calmly replied, "He's kneeling before me now, begging for forgiveness. But..."

He took the check from Edgar's hands and shoved it into his pocket. "But I'm fairly acquainted with his son, so I'll just let them off easy this time."

Edgar took a deep sigh of relief after hearing Alex's words. He felt as if he had been entirely drenched in sweat.

Felix had finally understood their situation as well.

The one who called Alex was Lord Lex Gunther, the most powerful man in the underground world of California. He felt as if his reality was being crushed.

He didn't expect this loser to have any connections with Lord Lex.

Felix feared for his life.

"Ah, well then, that's great," Lex said. "I was wondering if you're free this evening, Master Alex? I... well, I'd like to ask for a favor."

"Oh? What favor?"

"Remember that demon from last time? The person who put a curse on me is quite

a handful. Besides, my goddaughter, Waltz has been hurt by that spirit too. I'd like to ask you to check up on her, Master Alex."

"Waltz is hurt?" Alex was briefly reminded of Waltz's beautiful figure in that red dress being pinned down by him. "Okay, I'll be there. Hell's Angels, right?"

"Yes, exactly. I'll have someone pick you up, if

you'd like."

"There's no need for that, I'll drive over myself."

As Alex was having a light conversation with Lex, Edgar could feel his world collapsing. Alex was much closer to Lord Lex than he expected.

After hanging up, Alex turned to Edgar and said, "Get up then!"

He turned to the white BMW M8. "I'll be taking this too, you guys may leave now!"

"Oh, and keep your mouths sealed tight. Don't spread any rumors. I don't want to reveal my identity, especially not to the Assexes."

He didn't want Dorothy to know his relationship with Lex and worry. Lord Lex was known to be a brute, so not many people could accept that man's methods.

Edgar stared at Alex with mixed emotions, yet he still nodded.

After handing the keys of the M8 to Alex, the Shepherds crawled back into the Bentley and rushed off.

Alex turned towards Beatrice with a cold and stern expression.

Beatrice was watching them from a distance, so she had no idea what they talked about. However, with Alex's murderous glare, she ran into the building screaming.

Just then, she bumped into her sister,
Dorothy.

“Sis, help! Alex is trying to kill me!”

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0089

Dorothy stared at her sister coldly.

She had witnessed everything back in the meeting room.

Beatrice had brought Felix to her company to propose to Dorothy in public. Not only did it hurt and insult Alex, but it extremely

humiliated Dorothy as well.

How would she appear in public now?

Dorothy looked up and saw Alex walking in. "I won't be interfering with this. She's all yours."

Alex's deadly cold gaze landed on Beatrice.

“Sis, you’re my sister! How could you do this to me?”

Without hesitation, Alex slapped her hard across the face, causing one of her cheeks to swell up.

Dorothy froze. However, she immediately averted her gaze—she decided to not look at Beatrice.

Beatrice looked like she was about to cry as her mouth fell open.

Merciless, Alex slapped her on the other cheek.

Beatrice's eyes were filled with fear and her body started to tremble. This version of Alex was unfamiliar to her; she was terrified of him. This was no longer the useless loser who slaved away in their house.

“Don’t you remember? I said that if you don’t see me as your brother-in-law, I will not hesitate to slap you!

“Since you have no moral conscience, I’ll just have to teach you some,” Alex said as he lifted his hand again.

“Ah!” Beatrice covered both cheeks with her hands and hid behind Dorothy. “Sis, I admit it, I was wrong! Please stop him, he’s really going to kill me!”

Maya, who had been following Alex since the beginning, was appalled. She felt as if Alex had changed drastically. He was now a cold and wild man, staring everyone down.

“What happened to him?”

“It’s like he has just awoken from decadency—he’s changed so much.”

The receptionist on the ground floor and the other employees covered their mouths in shock as well.

Even if they didn’t watch the Shepherds groveling before Alex from afar, watching him slap the absolute hell out of his wife’s

sister was still immensely shocking.

However, they all knew that she deserved it.

The male employees could empathize with Alex's situation. They wouldn't be able to hold in their anger if this happened to them as well.

However, Dorothy was soft-hearted.

This was her sister after all. She signaled Alex to stop.

Alex glared at Beatrice and asked, "Does it hurt?"

Beatrice's eyes were filled with fury, yet she still nodded profusely. "Yeah!"

"Then remember that pain!"

Alex could tell that Beatrice didn't want to accept defeat. Her eyes said it all.

However, he didn't care if she wanted revenge on him. If this happened again, he would just have to keep going at her until she was willing to admit defeat.

"Dorothy, I have some things to take care of later. You can keep yourself busy while I'm away. I'll be off now." Alex turned to Dorothy with a warm and loving

expression. "Here're the keys to the red
M8, you can take it."

Dorothy took the keys in confusion. "What
about you?"

Alex signalled to the other car outside.

"Someone gave this out for free
anyway. So I'll make good use of it," he
said as he waved and left the building.

Dorothy watched him walk out of the building. Her mind was filled with unanswered questions—she couldn't figure him out at all.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0090

It was 1:30 P.M. by the time Alex arrived at Hell's Angels owned by Thousand Miles Conglomerate.

A few underlings were waiting at the door. As soon as they noticed Alex, they bowed down respectfully. "Welcome, Master Alex!"

Alex was starting to get used to this title and nodded. "Where's Lord Lex?"

"Lord Lex is inside. After you, sir."

Lex looked much better compared to when a demon was draining his Chiand blood. His cheeks were slightly flushed and he seemed to be quite energized as well.

Alex noticed a strong aroma of traditional medicine and could miraculously tell which herbs and in what ratios were used just from scent... This was another ability that came with the Ultimate Book of Medicine.

Zr0tA

The medicine included ginseng, wild celery, chinese knotweed, saussurea, and many other expensive herbs. It seemed that Lex was taking this medicine to help restore blood flow.

However, the ratios seemed a bit off—it was too concentrated. That was why Lex's face was fairly flushed.

Upon Alex's arrival, Lex smiled. "Mr. Rockefeller, it's great that you're finally

here! Can you please check up on Waltz?

She's extremely ill."

Since there were others around, Lex knew that it wasn't appropriate to refer to Alex as master.

Alex nodded and didn't question any further.

Alex was shocked to see Waltz in this state. Her limbs were tied to all four

corners of the bed as she screamed in pain, struggling to break free. The expensive rosewood bed was shaking vigorously from her drastic movements.

Alex took a look into her Chi and identified the problem. She was poisoned after being bitten by a spirit.

"How did she get hurt?" Alex asked.

"Mr. Rockefeller, do you still remember that painting from before? That was a gift from Xavier Young at my birthday celebration. I thought he had good intentions, but apparently not. There is someone powerful backing him in order to kill me, just to get their hands on Thousand Miles Conglomerate," Lex said furiously. "Waltz brought some of our men to force the Youngs to talk, but they came back defeated. Waltz almost

didn't make it all the way back here."

"Oh!" Alex nodded lightly. He wasn't interested in any of their underground conflicts.

However, only a vengeful spirit would be able to make a living person suffer from just a mere bite.

"Ahhh, I can't take it anymore! Hey,

Rockefeller, can you even save me?"Waltz yelled at Alex. She was still struggling, only managing to move her torso around.

Her front view

was quite the sight.

"Yeah, I can..."

Zr0tA

"Then do it quick! If you want anything, you could just ask! I don't want to suffer anymore!"

Alex calmly scanned the interior of the room that he was in. It was apparent that Waltz lived here as there were quite some feminine objects lying around. He even noticed a few undergarments too.

“Hey, what are you looking at? Can you please just help me now?” Waltz screamed. Her whole body was itchy and in sheer pain. She just wanted to make the itch go away, even if it meant she had to dig into her skin.

Her thighs were quite a mess from her scratching. This was the reason Lex had someone tie her to the bed.

Alex picked up a bag of melon seeds and placed one into his mouth. He asked, "Is this how you ask for help?"

"Ah!" Waltz was going insane. She'd rather die than endure this. "What do you want me to do?"

Lex was panicking as well, yet he didn't dare to rush Alex.

"You have to be polite when asking for help. Isn't that common sense? How old are you, anyway?"

Waltz screamed, "Mr. Rockefeller! Master Alex! Big Brother Alex! Please, please just hurry and relieve me of this suffering!"

"That's more I like it."

Alex stood up and tore her shorts in half around her thigh area. Her skin was now exposed and there was a black spot the size of a coin from which an ominous black mist surrounded her thighs.

Alex reached two fingers out, preparing to heal her.

Suddenly, a young man rushed in and yelled, "Stop!"

Alex looked to the side and realized that there was a man in his late 20s at the door. His eyes were filled with energy and determination as his aura radiated intensely.

The man said, "Godfather, how could you let this inexperienced jerk heal Waltz?

She's clinging on her lifeline now. What will we do if something goes wrong? This was why I had a real monk come by, Jarsurya of OblohaNuvem."

Just then, a monk in long robes and white hair entered the room. He really seemed like a holy saint.

CHAPTER 0091 - 100

“Oh? Azure, you actually invited Jarsurya of Obloha Nuvem?”

Lex turned around, surprised by the appearance of the monk. A bright smile appeared on his face as he immediately showed his utmost respect towards the monk. “Ah, Jarsurya the Venerable One! Thank you for coming to my humble home.

My place isn't much, I apologize."

Alex had never seen Lex behave so respectfully.

He froze and thought, 'Was this monk some sort of powerful figure?'

Upon closer look, he noticed something.

The monk had a fairly strong Chi—he really had a certain level of power. This was the first time Alex had seen anyone like him and couldn't help but feel curious. He wanted to look into the monk's Chi even more.

As he finally had a good look at him, he felt a slight sense of disappointment.

This monk indeed trained his Chi. However, his wasn't as strong as Alex's. Compared to Alex's Chi, the monk's was akin to a mere ant.

Alex had the help of his ancestor's Chi to help train him. Despite already using up one-third of the Chi, he was at least able to improve his Force to second base. His Chi infinitely flowed within his body, concentrating on his core.

On the other hand, Jarsurya had an empty

core. His Chi was only flowing within his veins and out of his body slowly. He was like a broken balloon –he just couldn't contain it in his body. Hence, his training wouldn't be sufficient.

Jarsurya noticed that Alex had been staring at him for quite a while though with slight disappointment. This angered the monk. Everyone had treated him like a demigod with the utmost respect since he became famous within this field.

However, this young man dared to stare at him with such a gaze, as if he thought the monk a mere con artist.

Jarsurya huffed. "Get out, all of you!"

After giving out such orders, Jarsurya didn't pay any more attention to Alex. He was a monk after all. Why should he be petty over a young boy? That would just lower his status after all.

“Uhm, this is Mr. Rockefeller, Venerable One. He is a legendary man too with quite the skills.” Lex explained.

“Legendary? Hah!” Jarsurya took a glance at Alex and smirked, as if Alex was nothing to him. “Mr. Gunther, you may have been fooled. This man is still quite young and he looks quite average as well. I can’t feel any energy flowing within him. What could he possibly do?”

Lex felt extremely awkward. He couldn't risk revealing Alex's identity.

"Mr. Rockefeller, well..."

Alex waved dismissively. "That's alright. I'd like to see if this monk is biting more than he can chew."

Jarsurya huffed again. "You're just a mere human, what would you know about my

powers as a monk? Fine, I'll show you my power to save you from the humiliation of being so unknowledgeable."

Alex waved his hand dismissively once more, took a few steps back and watched nonchalantly. He even picked up the bag of chips again and had a mouthful.

It was salty, yet quite flavorful. Alex enjoyed every bite of it.

Azure Storm shot Alex a dirty glare. If Jarsurya had not let Alex watch him, Azure would've kicked Alex out of the room.

As Lex's godson and the leader of the Three Great Chieftains of Thousand Miles Conglomerate, he had heard rumors of Alex's methods a few days ago.

However, Azure was quite the fighter too. He even hardened his skin just for extra defense and was skilled in many fields. So, he didn't believe that Alex was any better than him, though they had never competed against each other.

When Waltz mentioned that she was slapped on her behind when she lost to Alex, Azure started to hold a grudge against Alex.

Azure was quite fond of Waltz after all.

Just then, Waltz was at her limit. Her whole body was trembling as she screamed like a beast.

Jarsurya took a glance at Alex and said, "Watch and learn, young man."

The monk then pulled out a talisman as he murmured a spell under his breath. His Chi was now flowing through his veins and out onto the talisman. As the talisman fell from his hand, it spun in mid-air and brimmed with light.

This was quite a shock to everyone who witnessed it.

CHAPTER 0092

Both Lex and Azure's eyes widened—they couldn't believe their eyes.

Jarsurya took a brief glance at Alex, hoping to see Alex in absolute shock and disbelief as well. However, the young man was still eating chips, chuckling as he watched his work like a circus performance.

The monk became so angry that he almost made a mistake in his spell. He immediately calmed himself and shouted once to control the talisman to land on the spot Waltz was bitten.

The talisman became dull as soon as it landed on the wound. In just a flash, the talisman broke into shreds. The black spot on Waltz's thigh had become lighter as well.

“Waltz, how do you feel?” Azure asked Waltz
worriedly.

Zr0tA

Waltz nodded lightly. "A little better."

However, she still looked quite ill and upset.

Jarsurya said, "The poison in her body is quite strong. Even with my powers, it is impossible to remove all the poison in one day. However, you don't have to worry. I'll be able to cure her within a week."

Azure immediately rushed to the monk.

“Thank you for helping us, Venerable One.”

Lex was extremely respectful as well. “You have done very well, Venerable One. Thank you. Please have some rest.”

The monk then let out a sigh of relief and turned to Alex with a smug look on his face.

“Hey, young man, I hope you’ve learned something today!

That’s what we call power!”

Alex couldn't hold in his laughter and let out a chuckle. He swallowed the chips in his mouth and clapped. "You were amazing, oh, Venerable One. I admire you."

Jarsurya's expression darkened. Although Alex seemed respectful, his words were filled with sarcasm and mockery. He made it sound as if

Jarsurya was just a circus monkey in his eyes. The monk was about to erupt with anger like a volcano.

Zr0tA

Suddenly, a loud noise came from outside the room, followed by terrified screams.

Everyone in the room froze.

Azure jumped out of his seat. "I'll go take a look."

In just a few seconds, fighting could be heard and a loud yell followed. "Lex Gunther, get your *ss out here."

Lex's expression darkened and he immediately exited the room. Jarsurya followed behind with furrowed eyebrows.

Alex took a glance at Waltz and walked out of the room as well. He didn't forget to bring his bag of chips along.

Azure and a few members of the Thousand

Miles Conglomerate were fighting with the intruders. With his hardened skin and steel-like bones, Azure was like a beast. He swung his strong fists at the intruders, causing them to fall back.

Lex smiled coldly. "Well, well, look who it is. Xavier Young, do you really think I, Lex Gunther, am a dead man? How dare you barge into Hell's Angels?"

A forty-year-old man with a handlebar mustache stood at the door—he was Xavier Young. Xavier laughed. “So what if I treat you as a dead man, Lex Gunther? You’re about to die anyway!”

“Let us welcome Master Vaudou!”

Behind Xavier was a skinny middle-aged man with a chilling and ominous aura. He had bloodshot eyes with pupils smaller than that of the average person. As he

scanned the area, Vaudou pulled out a black bottle and swung it from side to side.

A black cloud of smoke came out from the bottle and formed into a skull before charging towards Azure.

Zr01A

CHAPTER 0094

It was a piece of chip.

However, this small piece of chip was concentrated with his Chi. After spitting it into the evil spirit's mouth, the spirit's mouth was sealed tight and it became paralyzed as if an immobility spell was cast on it.

“Huh, what happened?” Everyone was
stunned.

Zr0tA

The spirit had never stopped mid-attack.

Master Vaudou shook the spirit's bottle vigorously, shouting over and over again.

However, the spirit was ignoring every command, as if it could no longer listen to him.

Alex spoke up, "Such an evil spirit. You must've taken so many lives. I can't let you roam around this earth any longer.

He bit into his finger on his right hand and drew a symbol on his left palm with blood. This symbol seemed simple, yet it was fairly ancient.

He slapped the symbol onto the spirit, causing a bright light to snake from within with a thunderous roar.

This was one of the skills that Alex had required to defeat spirits—the Thunder

Palm Mantra.

The tall spirit screamed in agony before turning into a mist of black light as it became devoured by the mantra. This was an incredible skill for it had the ability to exorcise and cleanse the spirit, turning it into pure energy ready for one's own use.

Alex could feel a pure flow of energy entering his core. It felt extremely soothing.

“What?” Jarsurya’s eyes widened as he continued murmuring to himself. “Was that the Thunder Palm Mantra of the Sanctuary of Light? How has he mastered such a skill at such a young age? Could he be one of the Sanctuary’s disciples?”

Jarsurya was in his late 70s, yet he hasn’t mastered any of such skills yet. He thought back to when he ran his mouth arrogantly in front of Alex, and blushed in embarrassment.

Although Lex was stunned, he immediately jumped out of joy.

He had initially thought that he was going to lose everything today. But he did not expect things to play out in his favor. It would seem like his trumpcard wasn't Jarsurya, it was his master!

He felt like he was meeting Alex for the first time, getting to know his other sides.

As for Xavier, he was in complete shock and disbelief.

Master Vaudou, on the other hand, knew that he was in great trouble. The blood-sucking demon that he had trained for ages was destroyed by Alex in a blink of an eye.

Without hesitation, he made a run for the exit, hoping to escape.

However, Alex was much faster than him. He blocked Vaudou's way and kicked him hard in the guts. Vaudou landed on a table and the spirit's bottle fell to the ground from the impact.

Alex then stomped on both of Vaudou's legs, crushing them. He said coldly, "Using living humans to feed spirits, you really are

a maniac. I have no idea how many people you've killed, you warlock. I won't let you off this easily."

Alex slammed his hand onto Master Vaudou's core.

His Chi was now crushed and his core was destroyed. Everything that he had worked for up until now was all for naught.

Master Vaudou screamed in pain before he vomited blood and fainted.

Xavier was infuriated. He thought that his plan succeeded. But this youngman had to stand in his way and turn the tables. Moreover, his underlings were outnumbered if they got into a physical fight.

Lex knew that as well, hence he immediately ordered a group of his best fighters to capture Xavier and his men.

Jarsurya crawled back up to his feet and bowed to Alex. "Mr. Rockefeller, oh, Venerable One. You do have immense power and skills. I'm truly sorry to have looked down on you just now. Please forgive me!"

Relieved, Lex approached Alex and praised him. "Mr. Rockefeller, thank you for giving us a hand this time. I would've died back there. I bow to you, oh, Venerable One."

Lex was really bowing to Alex out of gratitude and respect this time.

Jarsurya asked, "If I may ask, Mr. Rockefeller, are you a disciple of the Sanctuary of Light?"

CHAPTER 0095

Alex stared at Jarsurya. The latter was just as respectful towards him as Lexwas.

However, Alex shook his head and said, "No, I'm not."

Zr0tA

Jarsurya slapped his own thigh and exclaimed, "That's right! The ThunderPalm Mantra of the Sanctuary of Light can't convert the spirit's energy for their own use. Mr.

Rockefeller is practically a demigod. You're much stronger than them."

Alex was speechless. This monk may be old, but he is great at kissing *ss compared to Lex Gunther.

However, Alex decided not to explain much. He took a glance at Azure and said, "You guys can deal with everything else. I'll check up on Waltz now."

Azure was extremely jealous upon hearing those words. But he was powerless compared to Alex's weird and mysterious methods.

Moreover, he had been bitten by the evil spirit as well, so his condition was much

worse than Waltz's. But Alex was not acquainted with him at all, so it was only normal that he'd cure a beauty like Waltz first.

"What happened outside?" Waltz asked worriedly when she noticed Alex walk in.

"Nothing really."

Alex sat at her bedside and stared at the wound on her thigh. He reached his hand out to touch it gently as well.

Waltz was startled. "Ah, what are you doing! You shameless bastard!"

Alex ignored her since she was tied up. It was impossible for her to escape anyway. He decided to tease her a little, sliding his hand further in as he shot her a sly smile.

“Ah! If you dare to touch me there, Rockefeller, I’ll kill you!” Waltz screamed. She turned her head to the side and saw Lex frozen at the door. She immediately called out to him. “Godfather!”

Lex was amused—he was shocked yet overjoyed. He immediately replied, “I didn’t see anything! Ah, I must be in the wrong room. Please continue!”

He backed out of the room and closed the door, blocking Jarsurya's view. Jarsurya had wanted to see how Alex would cure Waltz.

Jarsurya's eyes lit up, "Mr. Rockefeller... Mr. Gunther, you're a lucky man!"

Lex had almost let out a chuckle from joy as well.

If Waltz and Alex were to become a thing,
then he could become family with Alex.

What more could he wish for?

Azure, though, was extremely bitter and
upset as he followed them.

Alex was just playing a prank on Waltz. She
may be extraordinarily beautiful, but he
wouldn't do such things without her
consent.

He reached for her pulse.

Alex then aimed at her thigh and carried out the Bahiskara Acupuncture.

After just seven acupuncture points, the poison was removed completely.

The whole procedure only lasted for half a minute.

“The poison has been removed.” Alex
smiled and freed her from her restraints.

Waltz was astonished.

Zr0tA

When she was still in immense suffering, that monk had only relieved it slightly.

Yet this man cured her just by poking on her thighs seven times.

His medical skills were absolutely astounding.

Alex opened the door and let both Lex and Jarsurya in. They were amazed as they checked up on Waltz, especially Jarsurya who just couldn't stop praising

Alex. "Mr. Rockefeller's methods are really out of this world."

Although Jarsurya had been bitten by the spirit, he didn't seem to be affected at all.

Azure, on the contrary, was screaming like a beast, his expression became insanely twisted. Alex decided to cure him too since he started getting annoyed by the sounds he was making.

“Thank you... Mr. Rockefeller.” Azure said,
lowering his head as his whole body was
drenched in sweat.

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0096

Jarsurya bid his goodbyes and left Saintville.

Zr0tA

Alex pulled Lex to the side as he had wanted to speak to him alone. "I'd like you to help me with something."

Lex bowed and said, "Yes, master."

Alex pulled Lex back up and said, "It's fine, you're getting on with age so you don't have to bow every single time you talk to me! Oh, and stop calling me master. All these titles just confuse me! Just call me Mr."

Rockefeller from now on!”

“Yes, master...Mr. Rockefeller.”

“By the way, here’s your card.”

Alex was returning a black bank card with ten billion dollars inside. Lex was shocked.

“This is your pocket change! How could you not have money in this economy?”

To which Alex replied, "I've already transferred 30 million into my account. This card is just way too eye-catching and ten billion is too much. If my wife or mom ever finds out about it, I wouldn't know how to explain! Besides, if I really need more money, I'll inform you."

Lex nodded. "Sorry, that is very inconsiderate of me! Madame and Lady's safety is our top priority. I will be more careful in the future. I promise to never reveal your relationship with Thousand Miles Conglomerate."

"That's more like it! Okay, back to business. I'd like you to investigate the driver who was involved in my parent's accident, Anthony Pattinson. I suspect that he was ordered to do so."

Lex furrowed his eyebrows. "I've investigated this person, he didn't seem suspicious. However, I'll try to dig deeper this time. If I find anything, I'll inform you immediately."

Before he left, Alex took the spirit's bottle. This was a mystical tool after all.

Meanwhile, a young man in tattered clothes stumbled into Rockefeller

Manor. That man was Spark
Rockefeller.

A maid started screaming, "Ah! Young Lord,
what...what happened to you?"

Within a few moments, the whole
Rockefeller family came running out,
including John and his wife, Noah's wife
and the head of the Rockefeller family,
Bill.

“Spark, where have you been for the past few days?” John’s wife, Olivia Banks asked as she hugged Spark. She looked heartbroken as tears welled up in her eyes. “We couldn’t find you at all. Our calls couldn’t go through too! I was going to report you as a missing person already!”

“Alex, it was Alex. I want him dead! I want him f*cking dead!” Spark screamed, slurring his words. He looked like a wounded beast—half of his teeth were missing and his gums were swollen. It was

difficult for him to even speak.

“What happened?” Olivia’s eyes were filled with fury.

After Alex broke Scarface’s legs, he went to Waltz for back up.

However, he didn’t expect Alex to be Lord Lex’s honored guest.

Hence, the group captured Spark and beat him up. He was even locked up for two days before he could escape.

Some of his bones were fractured as well.

John was furious when he heard what happened. He wanted to kill Alex right there and then. Suddenly, the head of the family, Bill said, "Alex, you bastard! I'll have both you and your mother dead in a ditch for hurting my grandson!"

As soon as he finished, Bill suddenly collapsed.

They immediately sent him to the hospital. Apparently, he had become

paralyzed from the neck down and would have to spend his remaining days in bed.

“Why? Why did this happen?”

‘It’s all because of that bastard, Alex! I want him dead!’ John thought to himself.

He called for his bodyguard as his eyes became filled with murderous intent.

“Brock, go get Alex and his mother. I want both of them kneeling before me by

tonight!"

ZrótA

CHAPTER 0097

Alex was still thinking about the incident with Jarsurya and Vaudou on his way home.

Jarsurya did indeed have a fairly strong Chi within him. And Vaudou also had similar energy flowing in his body though it was more sinister and evil.

What had they meant by 'mastered'?

At the time, Vaudou had insulted Jarsurya as he controlled the spirit, saying that Jarsurya had not mastered his skills. Alex kept trying to find out about skill mastery within his mind, but he still couldn't find any answers.

According to what he received from his ancestor, training the Force would refine his Chi. When the fourth level of the Force

was achieved, then he would attain a stronger foundation.

'Oh well, I don't care. Whatever 'mastery' they meant would still be weaker than the Force that my ancestor gave me,' Alex thought and drove back to Maple Villa.

However, he froze as soon as he entered his house.

There was a big man with a gold dagger sitting on the sofa. He was calmly sipping on some red wine while watching television.

'Holy sh*t, who the hell is this? Don't tell me he's mom's friend?'

Suddenly, he noticed that Brittany had fallen unconscious next to the coffeetable. He could tell from where he was standing that one side of her face was badly swollen with a slap mark.

“Mom!” Alex was shocked as his murderous aura grew.

Anger built up within his chest as if he was about to strike at any second.

Alex rushed over to Brittany to check on her wounds. It seemed that she had only been slapped. She must've fainted from the impact.

The man sat on the sofa, not moving a muscle the whole time. He stared confidently and condescendingly at Alex, as if he was a mere ant.

"Who, are you?" Alex asked calmly as he

moved his mother to a safer place.

However, the calmer he looked on the outside, the angrier he grew inside. He regretted leaving his mother alone at home without any form of protection. But he was just glad that nothing worse happened, or else he would've blamed himself for the rest of his life.

This man was John's bodyguard, Brock.

He was almost two meters tall and had a build like a bear. He was a very skilled and powerful fighter.

Brock smiled at Alex mockingly and said, "You seem to be angry. You want to kill me, don't you? It's no use, you're just a mere ant when going up against me! Since everyone's here, let's go. Someone would like to meet you... Oh, by the way, this wine tastes great, thanks!"

Brock spoke softly, yet his words were conveyed arrogantly. He behaved as if he was a God everyone worshipped—even thanking someone should be considered charity.

Alex suppressed the urge to fight him right then and there. “Who wants to see me?”

Brock replied, “John Rockefeller.”

“Oh!” Alex nodded. “Sure, I’d like to see him anyway. However, before that, I have something I’d like to do.”

“Tell me then, I might be able to help with it.”

“Oh, you totally can. Well... I’d like to smash all four of your limbs and make sure you won’t be able to train in martial arts again.”

'What?'

Brock was shocked and infuriated as he lunged towards Alex and swung his fists at him.

Fighters were separated into four colored categories: Divine, Earth, Mystic and Royal, where Divine was the highest rank and Royal was the lowest.

Brock was one of the best fighters within the Royal ranks. However, it would be unwise to look down upon Royal rankers as those who have achieved it would have great internal strength. Many fighters weren't even able to master the lowest rank in martial arts.

For example, Edgar's bodyguard, Jay, was the first runner-up of the national kickboxing competition. However, he couldn't even make it to Royal rank.

If Jay were to go up against Brock, he would be crushed in an instant.

But Alex didn't intend to dodge Brock's attacks at all. He maintained a calm composure the whole time though his eyes shone with determination.

Brock thought that Alex was frozen from shock.

CHAPTER 0098

Alex suddenly raised his arm and swung his fist as well. He moved so nimbly, as if his body was made of cotton.

But when the two punches collided, Brock felt a strong flow of energy gushing out from Alex's fist.

Suddenly, Brock heard the sound of bones crushing as his right arm broke, followed by a sudden rush of electric shock before his body went numb.

Brock looked at his deformed arm as it sagged from his shoulder, yet he couldn't feel any pain at all.

He couldn't believe that this was happening.

Alex, who he had initially called an ant, had turned the tables on him and broke his

arm.

“This... This isn’t real!”

Alex sternly reached for Brock’s other arm and gripped onto it. With another crack, his wrist was completely dislocated. He then proceeded to break his legs as well.

With one last punch, he destroyed his core completely.

In just five seconds, Brock—who acted so almighty like a God—was now a mere useless pest.

Brock started vomiting blood and felt an immense pain with this last strike. He started to become paralyzed and just wanted it all to end.

“How... How are you so strong?”

“Who are you?” Brock asked. He looked shocked and reluctant to admit defeat despite being in pain and feeling embarrassed.

Alex stared at him and ignored his question.

He then dialed Lex’s number.

“Mr. Rockefeller, how can I help you?”

“I need a fighter who is smart and skilled to protect my mom. It would be better if the person is a woman.”

Zr0tA

Lex immediately replied, "Waltz, the. Would Waltz be cut out for this?"

Lex was holding in his smile. He had been slightly frustrated that Waltz and Alex couldn't spend more time together. However, now he's gotten himself a great opportunity to bring them together!

Lex didn't mind that Alex was married at all. Traditions didn't matter in the

underworld.

Alex gave it some thought and replied,
"Sure."

Half an hour later, Waltz arrived at
Number 8 in a Lamborghini. Her
demeanor towards Alex had softened
after hearing of how Alex defeated the
evil spirit earlier and was
worshipped by Jarsurya.

She showed up in her usual red dress and Alex couldn't help but steal a few glances at her fair and long legs.

"Ahem, why... why are you wearing this?"

Alex asked calmly after fully taking in this beautiful sight.

Waltz could feel the passion within his eyes when he was staring at her. She was slightly amused and decided to tease him.

“What’s it to you? Did you want me to show up in a bikini instead?”

Just then, she noticed Brock lying on the ground and screamed, “Ah! Why is this guy here?”

Alex was slightly surprised. “You know him?”

Waltz seemed slightly upset. "Of course I do. This guy is the famous Knockout Brock in California's underworld. He's the fourth best fighter in his clan. His full name is Brock Rousey. He's 36 years old and joined the Royal rank two years ago. He's also Frank Accordo's right-hand man, but he disappeared six months ago. It is almost impossible to bump into him in the underworld."

Waltz seemed to be quite familiar with Brock as she was able to relay all of this man's information in one breath. He seemed to be quite a powerful person.

Waltz then asked, "What happened to him?"

Alex replied calmly, "I broke all his limbs."

Brock had not fainted yet. His expression became twisted as he scowled. "Mr. Accardo will surely seek revenge for me. You have no idea who you're messing with, Alex Rockefeller."

Alex turned to Waltz. "Who is Frank Accardo?"

CHAPTER 0099

Waltz explained. "Frank Accardo is the CEO of Valtameri Co. in California. He's possibly the only person who is equal to my godfather in California's underworld. However, this man likes keeping a low profile, so he's a pretty mysterious guy. We once had a conflict with Valtameri Co. and was about to lose. But he backed away for no reason and this was never mentioned ever again.

“Back then, Azure lost to him.” She said as she pointed to Brock.

“Oh?” Alex turned to Brock as well, tapping his fingers on the coffee table.

‘If Frank Accardo really is such a powerful figure, then why would his right-hand man be working as a bodyguard for John Rockefeller? They were in noway

connected to each other.

'Looks like Mom was right, John must be
hiding a deep dark secret.

Zr0tA

'Could it be related to Dad's death?' Alex thought as he glared at Brock. He just wanted to murder him right now.

He approached Brock and bent down. "Tell me, why are you working as John's bodyguard? Was John the one who killed my father back then? What role did you play in all of this?"

Brock smiled but remained silent.

Alex smirked and placed a finger between Brock's eyebrows. He was using the Soul Banishing Touch once again!

One second, two seconds... four seconds passed.

Brock had persisted for a second longer than that murderer. Just then, a stream of blood flowed out of his mouth.

Alex was alarmed and he immediately opened Brock's mouth by squeezing his lower jaw.

However, it was too late. Brock had chewed on the poison he had hidden in his teeth—he had decided to commit suicide.

“God damn it!”

This man had just poisoned himself in Alex's house. Though Alex was now a powerful figure with the skills he obtained from his ancestor and also someone Lex admired greatly, he was still nervous about having a corpse in his home.

He had never experienced anything like this before after all.

Waltz noticed him panicking. She was slightly puzzled at first, then she chuckled and cocked her head. "Are you scared?"

As one of the Three Great Chieftains of California's underworld, Waltz was not fazed by a corpse at all. It was just another ordinary day for her—they see corpses every day when dealing in the underworld anyway.

Alex's strength and mysterious method had made Waltz quite nervous around him.

However, seeing him being scared of a corpse made her loosen up and relieved. "I didn't expect the almighty Mr.

Rockefeller—the one who even Jarsurya groveled for—to be scared of corpses. This is hilarious."

Alex narrowed his eyes. "This is my house. Why wouldn't it bother me that someone killed themselves here?"

Waltz took a step forward and lifted Alex's chin slightly, smiling softly. "It's not a bother. You just have to call me Big Sister and I'll take care of it for you. I promise that there wouldn't be any traces left. What do you say?"

The two were just two inches away from each other and Waltz's chest was especially close to Alex.

Alex almost couldn't resist from locking her

in his embrace.

'Could this be revenge for having her call me
Big Brother?'

Just then, Alex slapped Waltz's behind.

Waltz was startled and took a few steps
back. Her cheeks were flushed.

"You...you slapped me again?"

Alex huffed. "I'm reminding you that you're here to work as my servant under your godfather's orders. If you don't want to, I could always have him send someone else."

Waltz was slightly annoyed. "What? Did you just call me your servant?"

Alex replied, "Do you think just anyone can be my servant? You're lucky to be chosen so to be grateful for this opportunity."

Zr0tA

CHAPTER 0100

Just as Waltz was about to snap, Alex said, "Your right chest has been wounded in the past, right? So you'd feel pain frequently under your third rib on the right. This would affect your training. Whenever you try to control your Chi, you'd feel immense pain around your lungs."

Waltz was shocked. "How did you know that?"

Alex replied calmly, "I can cure it for you, maybe even help you improve your fighting skills as well. But if you don't want to be my servant, then so be it."

Walt's eyes lit up and exclaimed. "I'll do it, I'll totally do it!"

After a momentary pause, she said shyly,
“But... I don't know how to serve in bed.”

Alex wanted to tease her even further. ‘I’ll
teach you that!’ He thought.

Zr0tA

But he suppressed that thought and acted nonchalantly. "Even if you did, I wouldn't let you. Just hurry up and deal with this."

Waltz made a brief call and ordered someone to come over to clean up the scene, easing Alex's anxious mind.

Alex nodded towards the corpse and said, "This Brock guy wanted to kidnap and have me and my mom brought to John."

Waltz huffed. "He's such a poser. He asked for this anyway so he deserved to end up this way."

Alex smiled coldly. "Since John would like to see me that much, I'll gladly grant his wish. Stay here and protect my mom."

Waltz grinned. "Don't worry!"

Alex shook his head. "I'm still a little worried. You're too weak. You know what? Here, let me help."

Alex then slapped his hand onto Waltz's right shoulder.

Zr0tA

A warm gush of energy flowed into her body and her damaged veins. This warm flow of energy was the Chi that was formed from the Force.

The Force was mainly used for medical purposes, so its healing effect was insanelly effective.

Waltz suddenly felt extremely relaxed. Every part of her body felt warm and nice.

Furthermore, her veins and blood vessels unclogged in just a blink of an eye as the energy flowed through her whole body. Her training had only let her reach the intermediate level of the Royal rank. But now, she was able to reach the advanced level.

“Here you go. Too bad this is all I could do since your veins are too weak. If you were to take two chakra pills, then your fighting

abilities would surely improve." Alex spoke calmly and matter-of-factly. "I'm leaving the house in your care. I'll be back in a bit."

Waltz snapped back to reality only after Alex drove off. She could feel an intense change in her body.

In just a minute, her wounds had been healed entirely and all her vessels were unclogged. She was also now in the Advanced-Royalrank.

It was like a dream.

Normally, she would have to train for at least two years to reach this stage.

“Servant? Fine! I’ll be your servant from now on! I’ll serve you in bed if you need me to too!” Waltz smiled to herself and rushed to stay by Brittany’s side.

Within a few minutes, Alex reached

Rockefeller Manor.

A luxurious Porsche drove up to the manor and parked at the side as well. A group of teens got out of the car. They were the younger generation of the Rockefellers: Carol and Natalie Rockefeller—Noah's two daughters—as well as Paige's son, Elijah Jefferson.

Upon Alex's arrival, the three immediately switched up their attitude. William had

betrayed their country and became a laughing stock.

Moreover, Alex threw his dignity out the window as he became a slave to his mother-in-law. As those who shared the same family name, they had inadvertently become part of the public's gossip topics as well.

This was why all of them seriously hated Alex.

The eldest of the three, Carol was especially angry. She said, "Hey Alex, you useless piece of crap! How dare you come back here? Were you the one who knocked Spark's teeth out? Grandpa is paralyzed because of you too! You're just a good for nothing curse to the family! You're no longer a part of the Rockefeller family. Get lost!"

Dear reader, thank you for reading this novel so far. The story will be continued in the next part.

If I can get a little amount of your time, please write you honest review for this book on Amazon, which will encourage me to continue the story writing.

Story Continues on [Next Vol...](#)

[Next Vol.](#) Available on [Amazon](#) now **Book Code:**

BOCFWNL1C1 ([past this code on amazon search bar](#)

[and click on search](#)).